

Chapter 889

The several sisters were discussing how to release the news and get Darryl to rescue them when they were locked up.

Fuyao Palace had secluded themselves from the cultivation world for a thousand years, hence the only friend they knew was Darryl.

Darryl was lured into the sect by Leroy.

If he was also caught...

Fuyao Palace would be finished.

Chloe was anxious as that thought crossed her mind.

...

On the other side.

After Darryl arrived at Fuyao Palace, he was led by a female disciple into a remote path. The disciple said that Little Fairy was waiting for him in the secret chamber. ❶

After passing through a dark corridor, Darryl was taken to a cave.

"Sect Master, this is Fuyao Palace's secret chamber. The Palace Master is waiting for you inside. You can enter now," said the female disciple while her eyes were avoiding Darryl's gaze and flashed with an imperceptible panic.

It was strange.

The place was so dark, damp, and did not look like a secret cultivation chamber.

Darryl was muttering in his heart but still entered.

Whoosh!

The moment he entered the cave, a huge cage suddenly and unexpectedly fell from above his head at lightning speed!

Boom!

It happened so abruptly that Darryl did not have time to react before being trapped in it! ❷

The surrounding was filled with smoke and dust after the loud noise and Darryl was stunned when he came back to his senses. The cage that trapped him was extremely heavy with iron bars that were glowing with a cold black luster and being as thick as an arm.

"What's the meaning of this?" Darryl was shocked and turned around to look at the female disciple, but she was gone.

Phew...

Darryl let out a sigh and instantly gathered a wave of internal energy in his hand before slammed his palm on the iron cage!

However, the iron cage did not budge at all!

"Darryl, don't waste your effort."

Suddenly, a cold voice came as a middle-aged man appeared within Darryl's sight.

The black-robed person had a face full of pride and malice.

He was none other than Leroy!

"Leroy?"

Darryl was secretly shaken up when he spoke.

He noticed Leroy's internal energy was brewing!

How could it be?

Was his heart meridians not broken, rendering him incapable to cultivate anymore in his life?

'So... the letter written by Little Fairy was a fake?'

Darryl frowned as his eyes met Leroy's.

At the same time, Leroy also walked towards Darryl one step at a time while clenching his fists tightly—unable to conceal his resentment!

"Darryl, you probably never expected that one day you will be doomed in my hands." Leroy's gaze was cold. "I wrote the letter using Little Fairy's identity to lure you over and have also specially prepared this cage just for you."

Leroy's eyes were extremely cold while speaking that. "When you destroyed my Kunlun Sect, I secretly swore that I will cut you—three brothers in pieces. I've waited a whole year for this day!"

Whoa...

Darryl looked at Leroy coldly. "Where are the Seven Fairies?"

Darryl had realized the obvious situation of Leroy taking full control of Fuyao Palace. Based on his understanding of Leroy's personality, that man had probably poisoned the Seven Fairies to gain control of Fuyao Palace.

Leroy triumphantly smiled. "Seven Fairies? Haha, they are alive. The First Palace Master found a Nine Day Yin Yang Herb and helped me recover my heart meridians after all. How could I kill them? I will of course want to spoil them."

Chapter 890

Leroy threw him a flippant gaze. "The Seven Fairies are women after all. Of course, they would need love and tender care. I will cherish them. By the way, look at your current situation, it's better you worry about yourself than to think about the Seven Fairies."

Leroy stepped forward and looked at Darryl with a smile after speaking that. "Don't worry. Although I've caught you, I won't let you be lonely as I'll use the same method to get Dax here tomorrow and Chester the day after. As for your parents, don't even think that they can escape! I'll make sure to pay you back ten times more than when you destroyed my Kunlun Sect!"

Leroy's smile disappeared as his eyes turned blood red!

"Leroy!"

Darryl was furious and gathered his internal energy again before slamming his hand on the cage.

"Boom!"

Darryl used almost his full strength to do that which caused a loud noise that almost shattered one's eardrums! However, the cage remained intact!

Leroy laughed loudly after seeing that. "Darryl, don't waste your energy. This cage is made of Ten Thousand Years Fine Iron, it's extremely sturdy that even a Level Five Martial Emperor can't move it. What's more a mere Level One Martial Emperor like yourself."

Leroy sounded prouder than before with his deranged gaze. "Don't worry, I won't kill you right away. I'll slowly torture you to the point you wish you're dead instead. Only then can I finally vent my anger. Your brothers and parents will also suffer because of you! By the way, don't you have quite a special relationship with those fairies? It's a pity the Seven Fairies will soon become my women. Is your heart aching? Haha... you..."

Gasp!

Before Leroy could finish speaking, he felt his voice was blocked and stared with widened eyes at Darryl!

A smile crept into the corners of Darryl's mouth as he emanated a horrible aura that spread to his surroundings!

"Hum!"

A ball of white flames which did not seem to have any temperature leaped out from Darryl's palm, but its surrounding air was burning hot!

It was the White Lily Cold Flame!

"You..." Leroy was stunned. In the next instant, Darryl raised his hand and the White Lily

Cold Flame leaped out before attaching onto the cage.

Haha! Haha!

In the blink of an eye, the extremely hard cage started melting a little bit! ❶

'What?

'This... What type of fire is that? It could dissolve the Ten Thousand Years Fine Iron!'

Leroy's face drastically changed after seeing that as panic rose in his heart and he could not stop shivering!

Leroy's smile had completely disappeared as feelings of fear occupied his entire heart!

He did not know of the White Lily Cold Flame was the world's strangest fire! ❷

Although the Ten Thousand Fine Iron was extremely hard, it was nothing before the White Lily Cold Flame!

"Leroy." A cold voice came from Darryl's mouth. "I was able to wipe out Kunlun Sect back then, I can kill you today."

Hum!

As soon as he said, the White Lily Cold Flame had completely melted the huge cage into a puddle of molten iron!

Leroy's head buzzed, but quickly turned and ran before thinking further about his situation at that moment!

He did not have the slightest desire to fight against Darryl as he was a Martial Emperor who could even melt the Ten Thousand Years Fine Iron. How could Leroy possibly be Darryl's opponent?

"Are you running away?"

With a cold snort, Darryl drew out the Blood Drinking Sword and chased after Leroy!

Leroy was relieved that he managed to run into the Main Flower Hall. In the main hall was a secret tunnel in which the Seven Fairies were locked up. The secret tunnel was intricate and complicated, and those who were unfamiliar with this secret tunnel would lose their way after entering it. Leroy thought that so long he entered the secret tunnel, Darryl would not be able to get hold of him!

"Hum!"

Leroy ran into the hall which had a two-meter-tall vase in the middle.

Leroy quickly ran over and twisted the mouth of the vase.

"Boom!"

A loud noise could be heard as a gap suddenly formed on the wall not far away! The chamber's entrance slowly emerged! Leroy was terrified along the way when Darryl

chased after him but breathed a sigh of relief after entering the secret chamber.

"Leroy!" Darryl slipped in behind Leroy but was unfamiliar with the terrain and almost immediately lost Leroy after entering. ❶

"Boom!" Darryl clenched his fist and slammed it against the wall with his heartstrings tugged.

Leroy's escape would become a future threat! Leroy was really horrible, and allowing him to escape was equivalent to setting a tiger free!

Chapter 891

Darryl sighed. The secret tunnel was full of bifurcations and Leroy must have escaped once Darryl lost sight of him.

Darryl felt helpless and had to give up chasing Leroy. He wanted to return in the same direction he came and leave the secret chamber but was stunned the moment he turned his head.

F*ck, he could not find his way back!

It's over...

Darryl was stunned. What should he do? This secret chamber was intricate and complex like a maze. Would he be trapped in there?

No way. He had to find a way out and destroy the Incandescent Sect to avenge Lilybud.

Darryl was in a daze like a headless fly, spinning around in the secret chamber while looking for the exit.

On the other side, in Fuyao Palace's side hall.

A girl could be seen sitting and cultivating there.

She was not very old but was extremely beautiful such that she could be spotted easily from a glance within a crowd.

She was Leroy's daughter, Lydia.

The shelves beside her were filled with treasures from all over the world. Any cultivator would be jealous at the sight of those treasures!

After Leroy took control of Fuyao Palace, he collected all of Fuyao Palace's elixir and fed them to his daughter for her strength improvement.

Thump!

The room door suddenly flung open as Leroy hastily entered while covered in a cold sweat.

Lydia opened her eyes and asked, "Father! What's wrong with you? Why are you sweating all over..."

"Lydia!"

Leroy quickly walked over and curtly grabbed his daughter's hand. "Quick, let's leave quickly."

"Father, where are we going..." Lydia was a little confused and proceeded to ask, "Why are we leaving?"

Lydia had no idea what had happened.

Leroy was anxious. "Lydia, don't ask so much. Just hurry up and leave!"

"Father... You, can you wait for me? I'll get the jade flute," whispered Lydia.

Lydia had a jade flute given to her by Leroy on her fifth birthday.

She was very good at playing the flute and the jade flute was her favorite instrument. She even placed it next to her pillow when she slept at night.

"Quickly go and get it. Father will wait for you." Leroy was already anxious, but still lovingly caressed Lydia's hair.

He might be sinister and cunning all his life, but was very loving to his daughter and could never turn his daughter down.

Lydia nodded and quickly walked to the room door. She took out the jade flute and placed it within her clothes.

"Hurry up."

Leroy grabbed his daughter and quickly left.

Leroy took out a torch when he reached the Main Flower Hall before lighting and throwing it into the hall.

The Main Flower Hall started burning!

"Darryl, you'll be burned alive." Leroy's face had an ugly look. After controlling Fuyao Palace, Leroy had made several plans to kill Darryl.

Leroy previously thought that the Ten Thousand Years Fine Iron Cage might not be able to restrain Darryl, hence he had doused a layer of kerosene in Fuyao Palace.

Once Darryl escaped from the cage, he would lead Darryl to the secret chamber and lit a torch to burn him alive.

Although Leroy made such plans, he had never thought that Darryl could break out of the iron cage! It was made of Ten Thousand Year Fine Iron!

He could only set Fuyao Palace on fire to kill Darryl!

Leroy's heart was aching upon seeing the blazing flames. The fire would not only destroy Fuyao Palace, but also the six fairies who were still in the secret chamber. They too would probably not be able to escape.

'Darryl, even if you die today it's worth it as those six fairies would be dying alongside you.'

Chapter 892

On the other side!

In the secret tunnel, Darryl spent a long time figuring his way around but still could not find an exit. He was anxious.

'F*ck!

'How big is this secret chamber? I can't be trapped here forever.'

Darryl was flustered but soon heard some faint voices not far away. They sounded like the voices of women.

'Is there someone in this secret chamber?' Darryl was overjoyed and followed the voice to find it.

After walking for nearly a minute and taking around seven to eight turns, he finally arrived at a stone room.

This stone room had no door but was enclosed with iron bars.

Darryl was stunned as he stood bewildered in front of those iron bars.

He saw those six fairies sitting around the iron bars including Cindy and Irene. All of them looked extremely weak—completely devoid of their usual temperament and prestige.

"Little Wifey!" Darryl instinctively called out and excitedly walked over.

Unexpectedly, he found the trapped Seven Fairies there! However... Why was the Second Fairy not there?

"Darryl!" The Little Fairy was first to react. She raised her head to look up and just so happened to meet Darryl's gaze and felt so happy. "You, why are you here..."

After the Wishing Star Tower battle, Little Fairy had given Darryl two scripture volumes.

Both of them have not seen each other since then.

Little Fairy tightly bit her lip and calculated the time. It had been more than a year since they last met. She was extremely pleased to see Darryl again.

Darryl walked to the iron bars and said with a smile, "Leroy lured me to come here. He used your name and wrote me a letter to set me up, but his plan failed and I had chased him all the way here..."

Leroy, that bastard!

How despicable and shameless!

Little Fairy bit her lip and whispered, "That ungrateful scum Leroy lived in our palace for a year and repaid our kindness with enmity. I won't be merciful if he ever falls into my

hands!"

'In addition, he had also trapped us sisters here and used my name to deceive Darryl. Such a hateful man!'

Cindy was also filled with indignation.

"Yes, Leroy must not be let off easily!"

"We must kill him when we regain our strength."

Darryl smiled and said nothing after hearing the six fairies. He looked at Irene and said with a smile, "Little Wifey, I haven't seen you for more than a year. Do you miss me..."

Among the Seven Fairies, Darryl was most interested in Little Fairy.

Darryl also could not explain why but he wanted to tease her badly whenever he saw her.

Huh!

Little Fairy blushed and angrily stomped upon hearing him. "Y-you promised me before that you won't call me by that name again..."

Cindy and the others also blushed as all of them became shy and speechless.

'How could Darryl still be in the mood to joke around?'

Darryl was overjoyed and nodded with a smile after noticing their reaction. "Okay, I'll stop joking."

Darryl held the Blood Drinking Sword and gently waved it.

Click!

The iron door's lock broke.

Darryl could sense the Seven Fairies had been poisoned with their internal energy sealed. Otherwise, the ordinary iron gate should not be able to trap them.

The six fairies gracefully came out after the iron door was opened. Darryl could sense a gush of fragrant scent coming his way and become intoxicated.

"Darryl, you said you were chasing after Leroy till all the way here. Did you manage to catch him?" Little Fairy could not help but be the first to ask.

Chapter 893

At the same time, Cindy's gaze also fell on Darryl.

The six fairies gritted their teeth with hatred at the thought of Leroy—wishing to cut him a thousand times!

Darryl scratched his head and smiled bitterly. "Leroy is too cunning. I ran into this secret tunnel and lost him because I'm not familiar with its terrain."

'What?'

'Did he escape?'

The six fairies looked at each other.

Cindy whispered. "Darryl, you being a Martial Emperor is much higher than Leroy's strength. How could you allow him to escape? You are so stupid."

The six fairies looked disappointed.

"My wifey, I'm not stupid... Although my cultivation level is higher than Leroy, he managed to escape because he ran into this secret chamber within seconds." Darryl shook his head. "This secret chamber is like a maze..."

"You, watch out your choice of words." Cindy trembled as no one ever dared to call her that!

As the Eldest Palace Master, she had the most imposing character among the Seven Fairies! She felt ashamed and angry to be called 'wifey' by Darryl.

Darryl burst out laughing after noticing her shy look. He was about to tease her again but then noticed a puff of smoke pouring into the secret tunnel!

At the same time, a raging fire ignited in the entire chamber!

"What caused the fire..." Cindy's pretty face changed as she exclaimed.

A gush of fire swept in and just surrounded the area within seconds, turning it into a sea of fire!

The six fairies panicked.

"How could it be on fire?"

"It must be Leroy."

"Our internal energy hasn't recovered yet, what should we do?"

The six fairies stomped anxiously during the heated discussion.

Little Fairy's eyes flashed as she pointed to the water tank next to her. "There's water in here. Let's put out the fire."

There was indeed a tank of water not far away as Leroy had put some water nearby for the Seven Fairies to drink when trapping them in the secret chamber.

Darryl shook his head. "This tank of water is useless to put out such a big fire."

"Huh?" Little Fairy was anxious. "What... What should we do?"

A tank of water was indeed useless for such a big fire. The smoke became thicker in the secret chamber and made it impossible for them to tell the direction. Although the six fairies were very familiar with the secret chamber, the passage had been blocked by thick smoke. There was no way for them to find the exit!

The fire was moving closer to them with no way for them to escape after they had been trapped there!

"What to do..."

"Yeah... What to do... We have to go out and find Leroy for revenge..."

"Darryl, you have a lot of ideas. Can you think of a way..."

The fairies looked at each other before all of them turned to look at Darryl.

Darryl laughed upon seeing their anxious look and said, "Don't be afraid, my wives. All of you still have me."

"You..." Little Fairy was very angry. "How can you still be so frivolous at this stage? You kept calling us your wives despite the fire getting closer!"

Darryl laughed. He did not say anything and just waved his large hand. A protective film instantly emerged which isolated the flames.

Darryl's strength was at the Five Level Martial Emperor and could easily conjure a protective film to stop the flames. 

The six fairies secretly breathed a sigh of relief with all of them joyfully looking at Darryl. There was no need to be afraid of the fire with him around!

Chapter 894

Darryl laughed and deliberately frightened them. "Six Palace Masters, don't be happy too early. Although my protective film can stop the fire, it won't last long."

Darryl could not help but tease them upon seeing the panicked look on those six fairies.

The six fairies panicked again upon hearing that as none of them had doubted Darryl's words.

"What can we do about it then?" Little Fairy stomped her foot.

The protective film consumed internal energy and Little Fairy did not know how long Darryl could deploy his internal energy to maintain this protective film.

When Darryl fell into the crater, Debra had also conjured on a layer of the protective film. However, that protective film lasted for more than a year due to the crater releasing a strong spiritual aura that was sufficient for Debra to maintain it.

At that moment, Darryl was in the secret tunnel and the protective film would disappear once his internal energy was exhausted!

Darryl was overjoyed and pretended to be flustered upon seeing the six fairies being all worked up and nervous. "Quick. All of you should hurry up, pour water on your bodies, and get yourself wet first so that you don't get burned. I'll think of some way!"

Cindy and Irene nodded before quickly walking to the water tank.

"Yes, yes. Darryl is right." 🗨️

"We should first get our clothes wet and cover our mouths to avoid taking in the smoke on top of not getting burned."

Whash! Whash! Whash!

The six fairies gathered around the water tank and started splashing each other as they spoke.

In a blink of an eye, everybody was drenched and their perfect curves suddenly appeared in front of Darryl's eyes.

Darryl stood there while looking at them with a smile. He was secretly happy in his heart.

Haha...

Those six fairies had their own strengths and weaknesses with each of them having the most alluring body shapes.

Especially when the long dress became tightly attached to their bodies and exposing their curves. Any man would not be able to control themselves when they saw such scenes.

The Eldest Palace Master was the cold-blooded sister.

The Third Fairy, Fourth Fairy, and Fifth Fairy belonged to the charming types.

Meanwhile, the Sixth Fairy and Little Fairy were the pretty and playful types.

It was like real fairies from the heavens had gathered when the six gathered together. It was a highly sought after the visual feast.

Darryl was in high spirits from being dazzled by their beauty.

"Darryl!"

Just when Darryl was secretly admiring the fairies, the wet Little Fairy walked over and gently asked, "Have you figured out a way?"

She clearly noticed Darryl's unbridled gaze.

However, Little Fairy was not in the mood to care about that for the moment.

It was critical to saving their lives first from this situation.

Cindy and the others also looked over with an eager look in their eyes.

The surrounding fires were becoming more intense as the entire Fuyao Palace would soon turn into a sea of flames.

The only safe place left was the place covered by the protective film where they were standing at that moment.

The protective film which Darryl said could not last for too long.

Darryl showed a slight smile. He then responded in a very calm and composed manner, "There is a way of course. Otherwise, how could I possibly be your leader?"

"Darryl!"

Little Fairy groaned. "What situation are we currently in? You're still in the mood to say such things. You..."

As a result, Little Fairy trembled before she finished her word! However, her voice abruptly stopped!

Darryl before her was slowly raising his right hand!

Hum!

In the next second, a terrifying aura erupted from Darryl's body as a ball of white flames suddenly emerged!

"White Lily Cold Flame... It's the White Lily Cold Flame!" Cindy reacted as her body could not help but shiver!

She was very knowledgeable and could immediately notice that Darryl was holding the world's strangest flame—White Lily Cold Flame! ❶

"Hum!"

Darryl raised his hand as the White Lily Cold Flame whizzed up and floating in mid-air!

It kept spinning!

All of a sudden, the White Lily Cold Flame madly started sucking the surrounding flames!

Chapter 895

The White Lily Cold Flame was able to absorb magma in the volcano when he was under the volcanic cave. It would of course be able to absorb the ordinary fires around them.

Whash! Whash! Whash!

In less than half a minute, there was nothing left of the sea of flames! Everything was absorbed by the White Lily Cold Flame.

'Is that the White Lily Cold Flame's powers?'

The six fairies looked at each other and noticed the shock within the eyes of others!

Rumor mentioned that the White Lily Cold Flame was able to swallow other flames.

They thought of it as just a rumor but it turned out to be true! The world's strangest flame! No one had obtained it since ancient times! Darryl... That man...was really someone unfathomable!

After a while, the Sixth Fairy finally reacted and angrily yelled, "Darryl!"

She bit her lip tightly while being all shy and angry. "Why didn't you take it out earlier since you have the White Lily Cold Flame? You even have us splashing water on each other! Y-you did it on purpose!"

Cindy was indescribably angry at the same time.

"Yeah!"

Irene along with the rest also reacted upon hearing that and darted a suspicious look at Darryl.

"Darryl, did you do it on purpose?" ❶

The six fairies were busy yelling away before Darryl laughed and said, "Palace Masters, you've really misunderstood me. How could I do it deliberately? I have the White Lily Cold Flame, but I forgot..."

"You can't be trusted at all!" Wendy whispered.

"Yeah, you... When can you be more serious..." Little Fairy could not help but add.

From the first time she saw Darryl, he had never been serious at all.

"All right, let's leave here soon," said Darryl with a big laugh while quickly changing the subject.

The fires had been extinguished and the secret chamber's thick smoke had disappeared. Their vision became clear and could see the path ahead clearly at that moment. Cindy glared at Darryl and was the first to walk toward the exit.

After a while, the six fairies alongside Darryl walked out of the secret chamber and

arrived at the Main Flower Hall.

The fire Leroy set had burned the Main Flower Hall down cleanly.

The Main Flower Hall was a pile of ruins at that moment!

"Leroy, the Fuyao Palace is now your worst enemy!" Cindy whispered with tears in her low voice!

The Main Flower Hall had been around for a thousand years, but everything was over. Everything was gone!

Little Fairy's eyes turned red as her body profusely trembled!

"Okay, okay. Don't be in distress." Darryl laughed. He then looked around and said, "Let's do this. I'll send someone to rebuild the Main Flower Hall for you if you beg me. It'll be more beautiful than before. What do you think?"

Windon Real Estate was a leader in the real estate industry. Although it was relatively expensive to rebuild Main Flower Hall, it should not be a problem at all.

"Darryl, can you really help us to rebuild it..." Little Fairy stepped forward and asked innocently.

"Haha. It's of course true, but you'll have to beg me for it." Darryl looked at her and teased.

There was a sudden loud noise as soon as Darryl finished talking.

"Rumble!"

The loud noise sounded as though the Heavens and Earth were cracking up! Something had obviously exploded and struck a violent impact!

"Careful!"

Darryl was fast to react as he hugged the six fairies with a big wave of his hand before blocking the explosion impact from them!

"What exploded?" Darryl asked in a low voice.

There was then another loud noise!

"It seems to be from the Fairy Brewery Tower..." Little Fairy replied while biting her lip, "there's an underground palace used to store wine in front of our Main Flower Hall. It must have been the wine jars exploding..."

Boom! Boom! Boom!

More than ten popping sounds came just as they were talking!

The six fairies in Darryl's arm were uninjured. However, their faces were extremely red from blushing.

The explosion sounds continued for a good three to four minutes before finally

stopping. Only then did Darryl finally let go of them.

"Darryl, you..." Wendy blushed and did not dare to look at Darryl. She merely softly whispered, "How can you take advantage of us? Can't you just put a protective film on us? Do you really have to h-hug us..."

Darryl laughed and was about to say something but heard Little Fairy's cries at that moment.

"Look at that! What is that?" Little Fairy exclaimed and pointed to a distance not far away. 7

Chapter 896

All eyes looked toward the direction in which Little Fairy was pointing at her words. The other fairies and Darryl were suddenly astonished!

The explosion caused the grounds not far from them to cave in and created a huge pit with depths of a few hundred meters!

"T-the ground underneath was hollow?" The fairies looked shockingly at each other. They had stayed in Fuyao Palace for such a long time, yet did not know the grounds in front of Main Flower Hall were hollow!

Little Fairy approached the huge pit, walked along, looked down at the pit, and gasped.

"Sisters! Come and have a look!" Little Fairy exclaimed.

They approached the pit and were flabbergasted!

The pit was over a hundred meters deep and about 50 to 60 meters wide. In the huge pit was a golden pagoda about a hundred meters tall!

'What? There's actually a pagoda in the pit?!' The six fairies were bewildered and did not know what to do.

"There are writings on the golden pagoda, b-but...what are those writings? I don't recognize them," said Little Fairy softly.

They looked to the pagoda the moment she said such. The pagoda's topmost level indeed had a few huge golden words carved on it. However, these words were from an ancient language that neither fairies recognized.

"Darryl, can you understand the writings?" Wendy asked.

At that moment, the six fairies' hearts had subconsciously considered Darryl as someone omnipotent.

Darryl looked at the writings and smiled. These words were seal scripts, an ancient writing style which not many people could read at the present.

However, this was not a challenge for Darryl who had studied antiques for many years after all, so these ancient writings were not an issue for him.

Darryl smiled at Little Fairy and said, "Seven words are on it. The—exquisite—magical—powers—for—my—use!"

Although Darryl read them out, he was still confused.

'What do those seven words mean?'

Buzz!

Suddenly, a huge aura emitted from the golden pagoda!

It was followed by a scene that the fairies could never forget for the rest of their lives!

The golden pagoda that was over a hundred meters tall started to shrink in size until about a few centimeters upon Darryl reading the seven words before flying into Darryl's hands!

Darryl could not help but gasp.

'T-the pagoda could change in size? Could the words I read just now be the pagoda's incantation?'

Darryl could instantly clearly feel the pagoda was filled with energy and aura.

"Could this..." Cindy shuddered as she looked at the pagoda in Darryl's hands and said with a trembling tone, "c-could this be...Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li Jing's Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda?"

What? Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li?!

The Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda?!

Darryl was shocked at those words.

Everyone knew who Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li Jing was—a famous person in the World Universe! He was the Third Lotus Prince Nezha's father!

Legend mentioned that Li Jing had a Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda that could absorb demons and monsters into the pagoda, hence the reason for his name being Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King!

Could the pagoda in his hands belong to Li Jing?

At the same time, the others trembled as well.

A few seconds later, Darryl came to his senses and looked at Cindy before smiling, "Palace Master, stop pulling my leg. The Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li lived a few thousand years ago. How could his pagoda be here?"

"I'm not mistaken. This is the Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda," said Cindy seriously.

She slowly approached Darryl and could barely hide the excitement in her heart. "For the past several thousand years, the pagoda had many masters with its last owner being the 25th Fuyao Palace Master. It's mentioned in Fuyao Palace's records, hence I'm definitely certain about this!"

What?

Chapter 897

'The pagoda's last master was the 25th Fuyao Palace Master?' Darryl was slightly bewildered at that.

Cindy looked at the pagoda and frowned as she said with a conflicted tone, "Five hundred years ago, the 25th Fuyao Palace Master—Amber Slater stumbled upon this pagoda together with the man she loved."

At that, Cindy sighed.

'Man?' Darryl subconsciously frowned. 'I thought men had no social status in Fuyao Palace?'

As he had that thought going through his mind, he heard Cindy continuing, "Amber loved that man but didn't expect that man to cheat on her with another woman and even had a child together after barely even a year being together. Amber was extremely sad and furious, so she trapped him inside the pagoda."

At that, Cindy stopped for a while with her exquisite face filled with conflicts. "After that, Amber got dejected and never trusted any men again. It was because of this reason that she concluded there aren't any good men on Earth and set a new rule which forbade Fuyao Palace from taking in male disciples."

'No wonder men had no place in the Fuyao Palace. It was because of this.'

Darryl nodded in realization upon hearing Cindy's explanation before looking at her and curiously asked, "What happened next?"

"Woo..." Cindy sighed gently and said, "After that, the Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda was nowhere to be seen and only mentioned in Fuyao Palace's records. The Palace Masters after Amber thought that she had destroyed the pagoda, but who knew she actually buried the pagoda under the Main Flower Hall."

Cindy became melancholic at that. "Amber hated the man who cheated on her. However, she could not bear to kill him deep in her heart hence why she buried the pagoda here instead."

Irene and the others sighed as well upon those words.

Darryl was momentary silent while he scratched his head and muttered to himself in his heart, "What's there to be emotional about? It happened a few hundred years ago... Hold on!"

Darryl suddenly thought of something as he looked at Cindy and said, "You said the pagoda can trap people in it?"

Cindy nodded. "Of course, the Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda is an ancient Grand Weapon with limitless divine powers that can subdue all living beings, evil demons, and monsters. It's also known as the Demon Trap Pagoda." 🗡️

Cindy looked at Darryl at that with her slightly conflicted eyes. "Those words that you just chanted 'the exquisite magical powers for my use' should be the pagoda's incantation for recognition of its master so this pagoda is now yours."

Cindy let out a laugh when she said that. This pagoda used to belong to Fuyao Palace but had since recognized Darryl as its master. It would be impossible even if she wanted it back. She owed Darryl after all, so how could she ever ask for it back?

'Haha, this can conquer all living things? Won't I be indomitable? Haha!' thought Darryl.

However, he was elated for a while before hearing Cindy explained, "By the way, the pagoda can only capture a thousand people as far as I know. For the past few thousand years, the pagoda has gone through so many Masters with many people being sent into it already. If I'm not mistaken, that cheating man whom Amber trapped was the thousandth and also the last person so the pagoda can't capture anyone anymore."

'What?' Darryl's smile was stuck on his face. 'F*ck. The pagoda is now filled with people I can't capture anybody else? What use is it then? As an accessory?'

Cindy laughed upon seeing Darryl's disappointed face. "Although the pagoda can no longer fit any more people, it does have a thousand people within. The pagoda had since recognized you as its master..."

Cindy looked at Darryl and laughed before continuing, "So, these thousand people's lives are in your hands and you can decide their fate within a split moment of decision. Therefore, the thousand people within it have to obey you. For the past few thousand years, the people who were captured within are no ordinary people and if you let them out and make them obey you, it would be a frightening force of power.

"In addition, this pagoda has gone through many Masters." Cindy laughed. "It has spanned a few thousand years from the Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li time until our 25th Palace Master, hence the assorted people who were trapped in the pagoda should have many famous individuals through various dynasties among them!"

Darryl was overjoyed by her words, but immediately said with a frown, "Wait, something's not right—won't the people within the pagoda die?"

According to her, the last pagoda's master was almost 500 years ago.

After such a long time, the people in the pagoda would have probably turned into ashes.

Cindy shook her head. "The Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda is a Grand Weapon with its insides filled with spiritual auras and forming its own space. People who are trapped within it won't die."

Haha!

Darryl was elated at her words. Did that mean that the thousand people trapped in the pagoda were his to use?!

Chapter 898

Darryl got more excited as he thought about it further while looking at the pagoda in his hands.

The shimmering gold pagoda had five levels and was dazzling!

"My first wife, how do I release the thousand people trapped in the pagoda?" Darryl asked curiously.

At his words, Cindy glared at him. She said coldly, "Darryl, I'm telling you once more, don't try to be slick! D-don't call me that! I'm still the Fuyao Palace Master after all. What face do we have left if you keep calling us your wife?"

She then bit her lip. Cindy would have long flared up upon hearing Darryl call her 'wife' based on her temper. However, she did not know why she just could not get angry at Darryl.

"Haha. Fine, fine, fine!" Darryl smiled and agreed. "Quickly tell me how to release them?"

Cindy harrumphed. 'This Darryl is never serious. Never truly believe his words.'

As she thought, she stopped smiling and seriously said, "Darryl, look closely at the pagoda in your hand. Do you see that every level has a small recessed hole?"

At her words, Darryl carefully inspected the pagoda in his hands. The pagoda which could change in size was only a few centimeters tall in Darryl's hands at that moment. However, he could see that every pagoda level was rendered imperfect by a small round hole.

Cindy gently said, "From what I know, if you want to let the people out of the pagoda, you have to fill up every level's hole! According to ancient records, you'll need Heaven Repairing Stones to fill the pagoda's holes.

"You could release the people who were trapped in the first level of the pagoda by obtaining one Heaven Repairing Stone. If you have a second stone, you could release those people in the second level. The pagoda has five levels in total and if you want to release all of them, you'll need five Heaven Repairing Stones.

"Therefore, Heaven Repairing Stones are like the keys to the Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda," said Cindy flatly.

'What? Heaven Repairing Stones?' Darryl was baffled with a confused expression.

Cindy quietly looked at Darryl before continuing, "The Heaven Repairing Stones are the five-colored stones used by the Ancient Goddess Nuwa. There were not many Heaven Repairing Stones left after she used the stones to patch up the heavens. It would be harder than trying to reach for the heavens if you want all five Heaven Repairing Stones!"

'What...?' Darryl was utterly bewildered upon Cindy's explanation.

'F*ck, where do I find such rare stones? I obtained the Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda, yet can't trap people nor release them. What use is this lousy pagoda...?'

Cindy laughed gently upon seeing the anxious Darryl as she flipped her wrist before one of the five-colored stones appeared in her hand!

The surrounding temperature fell when the stone appeared! The stone was extremely glaring under the sun!

"Darryl, it just happens that I have one Heaven Repairing Stone passed down to me from our previous Palace Masters over several thousand years," said Cindy with a smile.

She continued, "You can unlock the pagoda's first level and release the people within with this Heaven Repairing Stone."

Gasp!

At that moment, Darryl gasped from being extremely excited!

"Wive, you treat me too well!" Darryl laughed out loud as he extended his arm to take the Heaven Repairing Stone.

However, Cindy immediately dodged as she clenched the Heaven Repairing Stone tightly in her hand and laughed. "Why should I give it to you?"

"You..." Darryl was anxious as the Heaven Repairing Stone was right in front of him, yet he could not get it. It was pure torture. He then said, "Am I not your husband?"

"Pfft!" Cindy blushed and said in annoyance, "You're trying to be a smooth-talker, but I'm not going to give it to you!"

"No..." Darryl was extremely anxious and finally stopped teasing her. "Palace Master, I'll stop teasing you..."

Cindy harrumphed as she sized Darryl up and said, "I'll give you the Heaven Repairing Stone on one condition."

"What is it?"

"Call me your good sister." Cindy laughed.

Chapter 899

The rest of the fairies burst out in laughter at that.

'Darryl has never been serious. Let him have a taste of his own medicine.'

Darryl laughed and without even thinking said, "My good sister!"

"You!" Cindy was annoyed and stomped her feet. She had not expected Darryl to be so thick-skinned and call her good sister without any afterthoughts! Shameless!

"Sister, Darryl's skin is too thick..." Wendy beside her could not help but say.

"Y-you... You're shameless!" Cindy bit her lip. However, she still threw the Heaven Repairing Stone at him.

Darryl giggled, extended his arm, and caught the stone. He anxiously inserted the stone in the small hole of the pagoda's first level.

A gold shimmering light instantly flashed as the Heaven Repairing Stone fitted perfectly into the hole of the pagoda's first level!

Buzz!


When the stone fitted the pagoda's first level, a huge force of energy came rushing out of it!

The people who were trapped in the first level of the pagoda were instantly released upon Darryl's thoughts!

Swipe! Swipe! Swipe!

Many figures walked out from the pagoda's first level!

10! 20! 100... 500!

A total of 500 people walked out from the pagoda's first level! The men and women stood neatly in front of Darryl! 

The 500 people wore different types of clothing from different dynasties and eras. Some wore long-sleeve gowns, some were in silk and satin, and some even in armors!

Darryl and the fairies looked at each other and were stunned.

The Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda's first level had actually trapped a whopping 500 people within it!

The most important matter was these 500 people's powers. Even the weakest was at the Martial Marquis level! There were over a hundred Martial Saints and 10 Martial Emperors!

10 Martial Emperors!

The atmosphere suddenly turned dead silent as the six fairies and the Fuyao Palace

disciples were all baffled. They did not know what to say!

Anyone would be shocked as well with so many powerful beings appearing out of a sudden!

Darryl noticed all of the 500 people released were in a daze with their eyes unfocused as though they had lost their souls.

"Woola!" A few seconds later, the men and women seemed to come to their senses. They looked around confusedly before landing their eyes on Darryl and immediately knelt.

"All hail our master!"

"All hail our master!"

Some of these people have been stuck in the pagoda for a few hundred years while others up to a few thousand years!

They were confused at first when they were suddenly released, but soon came to their senses before becoming excited and overjoyed!

They were also not stupid as they knew the Seven Treasure Exquisite Pagoda had recognized Darryl as its master who can decide whether they live or die with just a single thought.

Therefore, they have to call Darryl their master of course!

The Fuyao Palace's residents could not help but gasp upon seeing 500 kneeling people!

There were 400 Martial Marquis, more than a hundred Martial Saint, and 10 Martial Emperors! 2

These individuals were powerful people from the past and it was a shocking scene to witness them kneeling there at that moment!

Chapter 900

"Haha! Stop kneeling and get up."

Darryl was elated at that scene and was unspeakably excited!

He had suddenly gained 500 men under him with all of them being powerful and strong. This feeling was inexplicable!

The 500 men and women stood up in unison at his command with their actions in sync.

Darryl's eyes swept across them.

There was a mixture of men and women among the 500 people from different dynasties. It was overwhelming at the first glance.

However, one man attracted the most attention among the 500! Darryl's and the six fairies' eyes instantly landed on him!

'F*ck! This man is way too ugly!'

It was true as the reason he was so attention-grabbing was due to being too ugly.

He was in his thirties. He had a pair of high-arched eyebrows, eyes as small as a mung bean, his nostrils facing upward, his face was as dark as ink, and a mere few thin strands of hair on his head.

No one would want to have a second look at him with a face hideous to an extreme like that!

Darryl almost let out a laugh upon seeing him. He could not help but walk over to him and asked, "What is your name?"

Darryl smiled bitterly when he asked that. This man in front of him was the weakest among them besides his hideous face—only a mere Level One Martial Marquis. This Seven Treasure Exquisite Pagoda can only hold a thousand people which made Darryl wonder what made one of the previous masters trapped this man in the first place.

The man was neither too humble nor overbearing upon noticing Darryl's eyes on him. He greeted Darryl with a fist and palm salute before respectfully replied, "Master, my name is Pang Tong, with a courtesy name of Shiyuan."

'What?' Darryl's mind buzzed and felt as though he misheard before asking, "W-what was your name again?"

"Pang Tong with my courtesy name being Shiyuan," said Pang Tong with a smile.

Gasp!

Suddenly the entire Fuyao Palace exploded in commotion.

The Seven Fairies could not help but gasp!

During the Three Kingdoms Era, there were two famous military advisers—Crouching

Dragon and Fledgling Phoenix.

Crouching Dragon was naturally Zhuge Liang, whereas the Fledgling Phoenix was referring to Pang Tong!

History had recorded that Zhuge Liang and Pang Tong were equally famous. However, Pang Tong was extremely ugly!

Darryl's jaw dropped with his shock-filled expression as he looked at Pang Tong in disbelief. "W-who did you say you're? The Fledgling Phoenix? The famous adviser during the Three Kingdoms Era? The one who together with Zhuge Liang was called the Crouching Tiger and Fledgling Phoenix, that person?"

Pang Tong nodded before smiling and courteously said, "Yes, that's me. I didn't expect the Master would know of this nickname. It's just a false name, a false name..."

Pang Tong was a little flattered by Darryl's reaction.

"Woo!" Darryl took a deep breath and could no longer hide his excitement.

History had recorded that Pang Tong accompanied Liu Bei to war and was unfortunately killed by an arrow during the Three Kingdoms period. He was merely 36 years old when he died.

However, it seems that he did not die but was trapped inside the Seven Treasure Exquisite Pagoda.

In addition, history unofficially recorded that Pang Tong was rumored to be extremely ugly. Darryl thought it was just a false rumor, who knew it turned out to be true.

Darryl smiled and nodded. Even though he was ugly, he was still talented! He could not be considered as someone ordinary since he was said to be on the same level of talent as the famed Zhuge Liang!

Chapter 901

Darryl was extremely happy as he thought about that. He seriously looked at Pang Tong and said, "Tell me, what sort of people are trapped in other levels of the pagoda?"

Darryl's expression was filled with hope when he said that. A historical figure like the Fledgling Phoenix had appeared just on the pagoda's first level. He wondered which other powerful people would be trapped in the other levels.

Pang Tong smiled at that moment as he replied, "Master, more powerful people should be in the pagoda's higher levels. However, every level is being completely separated by an enchanted barrier, so I'm unclear who those people in the levels above me are."

"Woo!" Darryl was extremely stunned upon hearing his words. The people who were trapped in the pagoda's second level were more powerful than those in the first? The first level itself already had 10 Martial Emperors! How much more powerful could the trapped in the second level be?!

Darryl was very curious, unfortunately, he could not release the people in the second level unless he has the Heaven Repairing Stones. However, the stones were not easily obtained.

His eyes swept through the 500 people again as he was in his thoughts.

A quite conspicuous man and woman were also standing next to Pang Tong.

The man and woman looked like a couple.

The man was devilishly charming with his red eyes and had a huge bear tattooed on his back.

The woman was beautiful as well with a bright red snake tattooed on her hips.

They were both Level Two Martial Emperors—the strongest people in this pagoda's level.

"You two, what are your names?" Darryl walked in front as he looked at the man and asked.

"Master, both of us don't have a name," replied the man respectfully with a bow.

"People of the martial arts world call me the Red Eye Warrior."

The Red Eye Warrior then pointed to the woman next to him. "This is my wife who was called the Blazing Snake Queen by the people."

"The Red Eye Warrior and Blazing Snake Queen." Darryl nodded. He then muttered something in his heart before keeping the 500 people back into the pagoda.

The pagoda had recognized Darryl as its master and allowed him to shrink the pagoda at that moment until it was about a few centimeters tall with just a shift of his thoughts. He then held it in his hands once again.

"Darryl, this pagoda is amazing!" Wendy gently said.

"Yes, not only could it change in size, it had trapped many powerful people within it too!" The fairies discussed among themselves.

Darryl laughed from feeling good about it.

Little Fairy then blushing approached him. She took the pagoda in her hands and gently said, "Darryl, the pagoda is only a few centimeters. I'll help you put a red string on it so that you can wear it on your neck as a pendant and won't lose it."

Little Fairy took a red string from somewhere and looped the pagoda onto it upon saying that.

Darryl smiled and took over the pagoda to wear it on his neck. He could not help but say, "Only Little Wife treats me the best."

Little Fairy blushed at his words and shyly said, "You... You're doing it again."

As long as nothing bad was going on, Darryl would start to joke around again. It was really a headache!

The few fairies glared at Darryl before Wendy clapped her hands. "Right, where is our second sister by the way? I've not seen her."

As she said, the few fairies reacted and started to worry while at the same time commanded their disciples to search around.

"Damn, do you think Leroy Henderson had taken her away?"

"Yes, but Leroy has escaped so I think she should also have been freed..."

They started searching around while talking and it was not long that a disciple found the Second Fairy's charred body among the ruins with her body having been burned beyond recognition. However, Cindy and the rest could recognize the jade bracelet on the body and were certain this was the Second Fairy—Chloe Kane. ❶

"Sister!"

At that instant, Little Fairy sobbed hard with overwhelming grief and dashed forward. She could not help but wail.

Chapter 902

"Leroy Henderson! The Fuyao Palace and you cannot exist at the same time! One of us must die!"

"I'll roam far and wide to avenge Second Sister!"

"Yes! Revenge!"

Sigh!

At that scene, Darryl was inexplicably heartbroken and could not tame the fury in his heart at the same time.

Truth be told, he was not close to the Second Fairy.

However, she came together with Cindy White and the others to help Donghai City. They had a deep understanding of righteousness and justice which was very admirable.

At that moment, she had been burned to death by Leroy into a withered flower—it was truly heartbreaking!

...

On the other side of the New World.

Crescent Lake was located a few kilometers away on the outskirts of the Royal City.

The Crescent Lake received its name from its crescent-like shape. It was a famous tourist spot with its painting-like scenery.

The lake was bustling with people as the sun was shining brightly today with many coming here to play.

However, there was also a bay with the most stunning scenery a few hundred meters away which no one dared approach it.

On the bay was a beautiful small boat that housed a petite figure sitting on it with a small boy by her side. The boy was trying to fish with a small net.

It was Monica Vaughn and her child, Ambrose Darby.

Lord Kenny Bred sat in front of them and smiled. The atmosphere was cheerful.

The weather was great, so Lord Kenny Bred took Monica and Ambrose to Crescent Lake for rafting.

Lord Kenny Bred initially wanted to close off the entire Crescent Lake and insisted on doing it grandly when bringing his wife out since he was a lord and had the powers to do such.

However, Monica thought that it was excessive. At her suggestion, Lord Kenny Bred agreed to be more low profile and just wore casual clothes.

Even so, he still brought dozens of guards with him to keep watch of the surroundings and not let anyone get near them.

In Lord Kenny Bred's heart, the mother and son had always been his life's utmost priority. He brought them out to play and would naturally not let any ordinary people get close to them.

"Your Majesty Father, I can't catch any fish..."

Ambrose held onto the small fishing net, annoyed upon looking at the fishes swimming in the water and pouted. How did those fish have such fast reflexes? He could barely catch them.

"Ambrose, come here." Lord Kenny Bred chuckled and waved at Ambrose.

Ambrose quickly ran toward Lord Kenny Bred and looked at him.

"Have you forgotten the cultivation method I taught you?" Lord Kenny Bred lovingly ruffled Ambrose's hair before bending down and asked, "Ambrose, what cultivation method have I taught you?"

Ambrose counted with his fingers and replied, "Your Majesty Father has taught me the Rake Fist Method, Iron Palm, Tiger Fist, Flying Cloud, and many more."

Yes. Lord Kenny Bred loved Ambrose to bits so he would teach Ambrose different cultivation methods during his free time.

Ambrose was a mere young boy. He just learned how to walk, yet was already a cultivator who could barely master over 10 different types of martial arts.

"Good boy, Ambrose." Lord Kenny Bred laughed. "So try using any of the cultivation methods and hit the water surface."


"Umm!" Ambrose nodded hard and let out a yell with his toddler's voice. He lifted his small hands and lowered his energy field while he tried executing the Rake Fist Method and hit the water surface.

Splash!

Ripples started forming when he hit the water. The flow of the water suddenly became aggressive and formed a whirlpool! Not long after, countless fish were being dragged up by the whirlpool within the radius of a few dozen meters in a few moments of breaths!

"Your Majesty Father, there are so many fishes!" Ambrose was delighted as he skipped and hopped around. He started using his small fishnet to fish.

Lord Kenny Bred and Monica smilingly looked at each other.

In her heart, she was extremely grateful for Lord Kenny Bred. She had never let him touch her for such a long time. However, this man's love for Ambrose and her seemed to increase with each passing day. 

Chapter 903

Monica bit her lips. Although she still misses Darryl, she felt indebted to Lord Kenny Bred in her heart.

"Lord Kenny," said Monica extremely softly while biting her lips.

"Darling, what is it?" Lord Kenny smiled and approached her.

"Why d-don't... T-tonight we..." Monica bit her lips so hard it almost bled.

She was conflicted! She did not know whether to accept Lord Kenny Bred or otherwise. However, she still could not say those few words no matter how she tried.

At the same moment, two men who were not far from Monica and Lord Kenny Bred slowly approached them in a carefree manner.

It was Matteo Hanson and his disciple, Justin Quinn.

For the past year, Justin's powers have reached a Level Four Martial Saint under Matteo's guidance and his hard work.

Justin had reached a bottleneck at this level so Matteo brought him around to practice during this period by killing a few thugs and bandits for fun.

They were passing by Royal City and stumbled upon Crescent Lake.

"Master!"

At that moment, Justin smiled pleasingly and said, "Your birthday is coming up in a few days. What do you want as a present? I'll get it for you. Why don't I give you a sports car?"

For the past year, Justin had told Matteo a lot about World Universe's high technology which included cars, cellphones, the internet, and others.

Justin did not casually offer either as he could get one for Matteo. He was a rich heir in the World Universe after all and giving Matteo a sports car was just a simple matter.

Matteo smiled lightly. "You brat! The best gift to me would be your wholehearted dedication to the Incandescent Sect. Forget about sports cars and whatnot."

He knew that the sports cars Justin mentioned were a form of transportation that could travel at a fast speed.

However, he could just fly wherever he wanted to with his powers which would be much faster than a sports car.

"Stop!" A yell came from the direction in front of them as they were talking.

Dozens of black-clothed guards came rushing arrogantly toward them. They were Lord Kenny Bred's men.

The leader of the guards approached them, looked coldly at Matteo and Justin, and

said, "You aren't allowed to be here. Go away."

The leader of the guards, Christian Hodge was a Level Five Martial Saint who could simply release some aura with his powers to overwhelm and suffocate any ordinary folks.

"You ask me to go away?" Matteo frowned with his condescending smile.

Matteo had roamed the Earth throughout his entire life. Doing what he wanted and going wherever he desired with none ever dared to stop him.

Justin could not help but take one step forward and coldly looked at Christian. "Have you gone nuts? Who the hell are you?"

For the past year, Justin had been following Matteo to practice cultivation and stayed close to Matteo. Under his influence, Justin's character had become wild and untameable as well. More importantly, Justin was unafraid of anything with his master by his side.

'Such an arrogant dude!' Christian was furious as he drew his long saber and yelled, "You're asking for death!"

He sprung forward at that and rushed toward Matteo and Justin.

Buzz!

A strong aura exploded from Christian as a cold glow emitted from his hand. It was a terrifying sight!

Justin sneered coldly as he gently drew his longsword and faced Christian to block his attack.

Chapter 904

Clang!

The violent weapon clashing sounds rang out loud and the impact forced Justin back a few steps as he spat out a mouthful of fresh blood!

Although Justin was not as weak as his past self and was at the Level Four Martial Saint, he was still at a disadvantage when facing Christian in battle. Christian was the leader of the guards and had a lot of battle experience after all. He was also a Level Five Martial Saint—one level higher than Justin.

F*ck!

Justin steadied himself with an extremely pissed off face.

He wanted to show off in front of his master, yet had not expected Christian was not too weak and almost embarrassed the Incandescent Sect.

"Die!" Christian took the opportunity to press on, knowing that he was winning. His eyes locked on to Justin and pounced one more.

Whoosh!

In a flash, Matteo instantly appeared in front of Justin.

"How dare a mere pest act so presumptuous in front of me!" Matteo said coldly.

Matteo initially did not bother to fight. However, he was famed for protecting the weak and seeing his disciple injured caused his temper to suddenly flare-up.

Buzz!

At that, a frightening aura that enveloped the surroundings exploded from Matteo's body.

Gasp!

'Such a terrifying aura!'

Suddenly, not only Christian but also the other guards and Lord Kenny Bred on the boat were stunned. All of them were utterly shocked.

Matteo did not bother to say much as he lifted his hand and waved. A beam of flaming red light burst out from his hand.

Christian could not react in time and was hit by the red light beam.

"Hmph..." Christian let out a muffled grunt as he flew mid-air while forming a rain of blood. He flew almost a hundred meters backward before finally landing in the lake. The lake's water was dyed blood red and he died on the spot.

'What?'

'One move?'

'He killed Christian, the leader of the guards with just one move?'

The remaining guards' jaws dropped at that scene and could not help but gasp. Who was that person with such terrifying powers?!

At that moment, Lord Kenny Bred who was on the boat also heard the fighting sounds and could not help but stand up as he furiously glared at Matteo.

Christian was one of his best men! How did he die so terribly here?

One of the guards was then shocked as he noticed Matteo's crescent shape mark on his forehead. He trembled and exclaimed, "Y-you're the Incandescent Sect Deputy Head ...M-Matteo Hanson?"

'What?'

'The Incandescent Sect Deputy Head?'

At those words, the other guards gasped and could not hide the fear in their hearts.

The Incandescent Sect Deputy Head was an individual below one but above thousands! He was coined as the Evil Samaritan who was both just and evil. A person with a rebellious and untameable temperament not to mention extremely cruel. No one in the martial arts world dared to provoke him.

Lord Kenny Bred's expression changed and was stunned into silence. Matteo Hanson was famous and he had long heard of him but yet to meet him before. He had not expected to see him here.

Matteo looked at the guards and coldly said, "Your previous demand for me to move was already a death penalty but since all of you recognized me, I might spare your life so long you kneel and kowtow to me."

At that, Matteo's eyes landed on Lord Kenny Bred on the boat and said, "You too! Kneel!"

Gasp!

At his words, the guards looked at each other and were partially shocked and afraid.

'Such arrogant words! Asking even Lord Kenny Bred to kneel?'

One of the guards came to his senses and reprimanded, "Matto Hanson! How presumptuous of you! Do you know who's that person on the boat? He's Lord Kenny Bred!"

'Lord Kenny Bred?'

At that, Matteo smiled condescendingly as he played with the fan in his hand and said, "So what? All of you will die if he doesn't kneel and apologize today."

"How arrogant!" Lord Kenny Bred glared coldly and ordered, "Take him down!"

At that moment, Lord Kenny Bred was extremely furious!

He was a lord with vast powers after all. How dare Matteo Hanson in front of him ask Lord Kenny to kneel?!

How unruly!

"Woo!" At that moment, dozens of guards looked at each other before drawing their sabers and rushed forward.

Matteo sneered and did not even bother to deal with the guards. He just coldly glared at Lord Kenny Bred. Finally, a purple-red flame was forming quickly in his palms as he lifted his hands.

The surrounding air was instantly distorted due to the high temperature!

Woo!

Matteo lifted his arm and threw the purple-red flame ball over. The flame ball grew against the wind and formed a huge palm silhouette—aiming towards the boat where Lord Kenny Bred was on.

"Lord Kenny Bred!"

"Protect Lord Kenny!"

The guards were flabbergasted at that scene. They wanted to rush over and help but were too slow.

Lord Kenny Bred's expressions darkened upon feeling the frightening fire-palm aura. He immediately activated his energy field and used internal energy to form a protective shield in front of him and Monica.

At the same time, Monica hugged Ambrose in an attempt to protect him with her body.

Bang!

The next second, the palm aggressively crashed on the protection shield as Lord Kenny Bred felt a terrifying force against him. The protection shield was smashed to pieces and so did the boat.

"Monica!" Lord Kenny reacted quickly and grabbed Monica by the waist on one hand and Ambrose with the other before leaping to shore.

"Are you alright?" Lord Kenny Bred was anxious and asked with concern.

"I'm fine, I'm fine." Monica was touched as she could see Lord Kenny's mouth was bleeding from blocking the palm, yet did not care about the injuries on him as the first matter he did was to ask about her well-being.

"You deserve to die!" Lord Kenny was furious and glared at Matteo with bloodshot eyes.

Matteo's palm almost injured Monica which crossed Lord Kenny's bottom line.

"I deserve death?" Matteo laughed. "Let me tell you. Many wish for my death in the New World! However, those who wish for my death always died in my hands!"

Matteo's body flashed like a beam of light as he said that and flew directly at Monica!

"Lord Kenny Bred, right? This woman seems to be of great importance to you." Matteo sneered and grabbed Monica's wrist.

"Darling!" Lord Kenny Bred yelled. However, Matteo was too quick as it was already too late when he reacted!

Chapter 905

"Let her go!"

Lord Kenny Bred's face turned white from his sudden heartache upon looking at Matteo holding on to his wife and child.

"Let go?" Matteo ambiguously smiled. He then lifted his hand and slapped on Monica's body without any warning.

Slap!

The slap made Monica spat a mouthful of fresh blood and caused her to fly dozens of meters away together with Ambrose in her arms before landing badly on the ground. It was unknown if they survived or otherwise.

Although Monica protected Ambrose, the force of the hit was extremely strong and should have permeated through! Ambrose was just a few years old. How could he take such a hit?

"Darling!" Lord Kenny Bred wailed. It felt like his heart was bleeding as he immediately rushed over—picking Monica and Ambrose up. He kept yelling, but both mother's and son's mouths were filled with blood. No matter how he yelled they would not wake up.

"Master," Justin pointed to a place not far at that moment and said, "the Royal City guards are here."

Matteo turned his head to look at that. At the direction toward the Royal City, a mighty team of people and horses numbering close to a thousand with each wearing black armor came.

It was the Royal City Guards. They heard about the fight and knew Lord Kenny Bred was in trouble, so they quickly came to help.

Matteo sneered and was naturally not afraid of these guards. He then led Justin and pompously left.

Each of the thousand guards held a long spear in hand but did not dare approach when facing Matteo! They were completely overwhelmed by Matteo's suffocating aura and automatically opened up a path to allow Matteo and Justin to leave.

"Darling, darling!" Lord Kenny was heartbroken as he yelled at the guards behind him, "Quick! Send me back to Guang Ping Palace! Quickly go to the palace and request a doctor. Quick!"

Lord Kenny carried Monica and Ambrose as he said that and stumbled toward the Royal City in an almost maniacal manner.

'You have to survive. Please don't let anything happen to you. Please.'

...

On the other side of the New World.

Thousands of sailboats were sailing on the West Sea.

It could be seen from a distance that the boats were filled with people uniformly wearing black. A murderous aura hung in the air.

On the sailboats were three huge flags.

The first red flag wrote, 'Eternal Life Palace'.

The second flag was a drawing of two axes crossing with two huge written above it, 'Flower Mountain'.

The third flag had nine dragons on it with 'Justice for Mankind' jarringly written above it.

These people were indeed those of the Elysium Gate, Eternal Life Palace, and Flower Mountain.

The three sects' disciples gathered together which numbered close to a massive 300,000! It looked like the entire sea was filled with their disciples from a distance!

At that moment, on the leading larger boat stood three men shoulder to shoulder.

It was Darryl, Dax, and Chester!

Next to them were Jewel and Debra Gable.

Behind them were the Four Warlords of Elysium Gate, Henry Bi-General, Ten Heaven Masters, and Eternal Life Palace's Four Guardian Kings. The elites of Flower Mountain!

The three sworn brothers were there to destroy Incandescent Sect!

Darryl helped bury Second Fairy at the Fuyao Palace before immediately heading back to the Carter Mansion. The three of them immediately took off once they met up.

Thousands of sailboats reached the New World as they walked for half a day before arriving at a small town.

Darryl kept frowning throughout the journey as he realized that many people in the martial arts world were heading to the Incandescent Sect's Altar regardless of which city he went to.

At that moment, within an inn in a small town.

Darryl frowned with a doubtful look. "That's strange, why are so many people heading toward the Incandescent Sect?"

Dax and Chester looked at each other as he said that as both of them also felt it was strange.

Chapter 906

"F*ck it!" Dax did not care about that. He laughed coldly and said, "Once we reach the Incandescent Sect, we'll just kill on sight!"

Chester shook his head and frowned. "We can't act so recklessly. We should try to understand the situation first."

Then, Chester gave his order to the disciple next to him. "Go, find out what on earth is happening. Why is everyone from the New World's martial arts community going to the Incandescent Sect?"

"Yes!"

Then, the disciple quickly left.

Not long after that, he came back and reported respectfully, "Master, I've asked around. The Incandescent Sect's sect master, Laura Hanson, and her deputy, Matteo Hanson, are siblings. Tomorrow is their birthday, and the people are heading there for a celebration."

The Incandescent Sect's sect master, Laura, was only a few hours older than Matteo. So, both of them had the same birthday.

The Incandescent Sect was the oldest sect in the New World; they were a force of nature.

When the Hanson siblings took over the Incandescent Sect, people from other sects would personally offer their wishes on their birthday. It was a day of celebration in the martial arts world.

Birthday?

Darryl, Dax, and Chester looked at each other when they heard the report.

Slam!

Dax slammed his hand on the table. He could not suppress his anger. "Bloody f*ck! How dare he organize a birthday celebration!"

Chester sneered, "Since it's a birthday celebration, Matteo must be at the altar. It would be an easy catch for us!"

Chester was very excited!

He had heard that Matteo liked to roam around, and his whereabouts would always change too.

He was worried that they would not be able to find him at the Incandescent Sect.

Darryl groaned as he clenched his fist tightly. Then, he smiled mischievously. "Since it's a birthday celebration, how can we go there empty-handed?"

He could barely suppress the anger in him; Lily had been in his thoughts all the time.

'Lily died in your hands. How dare you still celebrate your birthday?!' Darryl gritted his teeth. He ordered his disciples, "Go and find me the town's skilled craftsmen. Since tomorrow is Matteo Hanson's birthday, I want to prepare a huge gift for the Incandescent Sect."

At the inn next to Darryl's, Lanvin sat on a chair in her room. She massaged her sore legs as she rested.

Lily stood by the window as she looked out in a daze.

Lily and Lanvin had stalked Darryl the entire journey.

They had started from the Carter Mansion, and then they had followed him to the Fuyao Palace. Then, it was back to the New World.

When Leroy Henderson set fire to the Fuyao Palace, Lily watched the scene unfold from a hidden corner.

She had been extremely anxious for Darryl then; she was afraid of the bad things that might happen to him. She almost rushed into the fire to save him.

When she saw that Darryl was alive and well, she was inexplicably elated.

Throughout the entire journey, Lily's mood was heavily affected by Darryl's safety.

At the moment, she was in an inn that was a mere hundred steps away from the inn where Darryl and his sworn brothers were in. If there was a need to act, she could be in front of Darryl in the blink of an eye.

However, Lily tried her best to hold back.

She could not do it; she could not face Darryl! She did not want her husband to see the changes in her. She was willing to protect Darryl from afar. She could continue to stare at the man, and that was enough for her.

Chapter 907

"Hey, Ugly."

Lanvin was annoyed. She said to Lily coldly, "Come over here. Take this letter back to the Spiritual Invisible Sect."

Lanvin had been annoyed throughout the seven days that they followed Darryl because they did not have an opportunity to kill him. She decided to send a letter back to her sect to ask for help to kill Darryl.

Lanvin had thought that they would not have any problem with killing Darryl.

However, after they followed him for a few days, she finally realized the extent of his powers. She was almost in despair. Plus, Darryl was rarely alone.

For example, at that moment, Darryl was with three sects and several hundred thousands disciples. How could she take action?

He also had Dax Sander, Chester Wilson, Debra Gable, the Four Warlords, and the Ten Heaven Masters close by his side.

An assassination had to be successful on the first attempt! Once failed, the target would turn more cautious, and there might not be another chance to kill them.

After a thorough contemplation, Lanvin decided to write a letter to the sect to request backup.

"What?" Lily bit her lips as she looked at Lanvin. "Sister, if I were to send the letter, then who would keep an eye on Darryl Darby?"

It had been Lily's duty to spy and follow Darryl around.

Lily was used to it. Not only could she look at her husband, but she could also ensure his safety.

Lanvin sat there and replied rudely, "I told you to go, so go! Why do you have so many questions? Did you not see how many men Darryl brought with him? He is so conspicuous wherever he goes, is there a need to keep an eye on him?"

Lily lowered her head; she asked, "What is in this letter?"

"There is no need for you to know!" Lanvin looked at her in detest. She urged icily, "Go, quickly!"

"Yes..." Lily responded as she nodded. She glanced at Darryl's direction and then turned and left the room unwillingly.

As she exited the inn, she quickly headed toward the Spiritual Invisible Sect.

She had gotten used to seeing Darryl from afar. She could feel the emptiness in her heart once she had to leave him.

...

A day later, at the Grand Brightness Main Hall, the Incandescent Sect's main Altar at Mount Mingwang.

The Grand Brightness Main Hall was the Incandescent Sect's most sacred place.

There was a hundred-meter tall flag outside the main hall. The flag had a flame's drawing with the word 'Incandescent'.

It was the Incandescent Sect's flag—the Grand Brightness Flag!

There was also a cauldron at the Grand Brightness Main Hall's innermost corner, and in it was a huge fiery flame. That was the Grand Brightness Flame, and is ranked 12th among the magical flames! The Grand Brightness Flame was the disciples' faith.

The Incandescent Sect had a saying for thousands of years—the Incandescent Sect stands as the Grand Brightness Flame burns.

The saying meant that as long as the Incandescent Sect was in existence, then the Grand Brightness Flame in the cauldron would not be extinguished.

On regular days, the Grand Brightness Main Hall was quiet and solemn. However, at the moment, it was extremely lively!

That was because it was the Incandescent Sect's Sect Master, Laura Hanson, and her deputy, Matteo Hanson's birthday. Their birthday celebration was held in the main hall.

The entire Incandescent Sect Altar was filled to brim with people.

Other than the Grand Brightness Main Hall, their other smaller halls next to it were also crowded.

The Incandescent Sect was one of the oldest sects in the New World. Not only were they famous, but their name had spread far and wide to the other lands as well!

Other than the sects in the New World, other sects from the other mainlands were also there for the sibling's birthday celebration.

The birthday celebration at the Incandescent Sect was a huge affair; it was as if the Nine Mainlands had held a martial arts conference!

It was a rare scene for everyone, even those with power, let alone average folks. Some might not even get the chance to witness such an event in their entire life!

Chapter 908

The Hanson siblings sat at the Grand Brightness Main Hall entrance; they greeted guests with a smile.

Laura was in a black cheongsam. Her tight and alluring figure was ambiguously on display; she looked gorgeous. Furthermore, she had a powerful aura, so no one dared to disrespect her.

Justin and a few elite disciples stood behind the siblings. They also greeted the guest with smiles on their faces.

Justin was extremely delighted.

Not only was it because it was his master's birthday, but more importantly, many influential figures from the martial arts world were there that day. He could take the opportunity to expand his social network.

Since he was Matteo's final disciple, people had to give him face.

A few hundred seats were set up in the Grand Brightness Main Hall. The people in there were prominent figures from the different mainlands!

There were many familiar figures there, and some were from the Great East like the Elixir Sect's Sect Master, Andy Curtis, the Lyod family's young master, Marcus Lyod, and his fiancée, Cheryl Marks.

Cheryl Marks was a household name in the Great East. Darryl wrote a song for her—As Sweet As Honey—and it made her extremely well-known throughout the land.

Since the Nine Mainlands's enchanted barriers had vanished, many important and powerful people from the different mainlands wanted to connect with the Incandescent Sect.

One could say that the birthday celebration was a gathering of the cream of the crop.

All the guests smiled happily; the entire Grand Brightness Main Hall was in a celebratory and festive mood.

It was almost noon, and the celebration was about to start. However, new guests continued to arrive. The disciples in charge of receiving the gifts had hoarse throats.

"The Barton Family from the Great East presents a golden Buddha statue!"

"Master Rowe from the Harmonious Valley presents two pots of thousand-year-old Prickly Blue Poppy!"

"The Iron Wolves present a pair of mutton fat jade bracelets!"

Gifts piled high at the main hall entrance; most of them were precious gems and materials from the earth.

"Sister, the sect has not been so lively for such a long time." Matteo laughed as he

looked at the lively main hall.

Laura smiled lightly as she nodded. "Yes, thanks to the Sky Breaking Axe! It removed the Nine Mainlands' enchanted barriers, and so, heroes from all lands can finally celebrate together."

Her eyes flashed proudly. "I believe that the Incandescent Sect will be even more famous throughout all the Nine Mainlands after this celebration.

"Report!"

A disciple ran toward them and exclaimed excitedly, "Masters, Commander Sloan and Princess Yvette have arrived to greet you!"

"They brought with them a pair of Jade Ruyi Scepters, several hundred meters long of silk and satin, and ten thousand gold tokens!"

What?

The New World's Warrior Goddess and Princess were there?

Suddenly, the entire Grand Brightness Main Hall was in an uproar. They looked toward the entrance!

Two attractive women walked into the hall slowly; it was Sloan and Yvette Lane!

The Incandescent Sect was the most powerful sect in the New World, so when the Hanson Siblings celebrated their birthday, even the New World's royalty had to greet them personally.

Matteo had attacked Lord Kenny Bred and hit the Cult Mistress and her child; no one knew whether she was dead or alive. The Emperor also knew about that. However, he did not wish to be petty about that matter. After all, it did not matter if Monica Vaughn was dead or alive. He did not want to make an enemy of the Incandescent Sect over a woman.

So, for the birthday celebration, the New World Emperor told Sloan and Yvette to go to the Incandescent Sect and present their gifts.

The fact that the two of them were there showed that the Emperor respected the Incandescent Sect. After all, Sloan was the New World's Warrior Goddess, and Yvette was the Emperor's favorite princess.

Sloan wore a long black dress; she was the sort of beauty that would put people at a distance.

On the other hand, Yvette was in a white satin dress that showed off her alluring figure. Even if she wore a loose dress, it would still be hard to cover her beautiful frame. All women would envy her perfect body figure!

Chapter 909

When Yvette and Sloan appeared, the entire crowd was in an uproar!

"Even the princess and the Commander are here! The Incandescent Sect must be very influential!"

"Of course! The Incandescent Sect is the New World's first sect. They are of great importance to the martial arts world. Even the royal family don't dare to look down on them."

Matteo regained his senses. He quickly approached them, smiled, and greeted them. "Princess Yvette, Warrior Goddess Sloan."

Yvette smiled and said, "Master Hanson. You and your sister are our heroes, and the martial arts world holds you in high regard. I am here to wish you two many happy returns, and may you have today's glory forever!"

Matteo laughed as he said softly, "Princess Yvette, Commander Sloan. It is an honor to have both of you here today. I must confess, I was involved in a regretful incident with Lord Kenny Bred. I hit his wife and child—"

"Master Hanson." Yvette waved her hand in dismissal. "You don't have to mention this incident anymore. We are not that petty on such matters."

Matteo laughed out loud. "Great! Great! Quick! Princess Yvette, Commander Sloan, please have a seat!"

Matteo was inexplicably delighted.

He wanted to laugh.

Even the Princess and Commander Sloan were there to send their wishes to the siblings; who else in the Nine Mainlands could have such honor?

More guests surrounded Yvette and Sloan as they were ushered into the Grand Brightness Main Hall.

Matteo could not stop the smile on his face; he lowered his energy field. Then, a loud voice boomed, "Everyone! Thank you for coming to our birthday celebration. I have a few words to say."

The entire hall went silent; the crowd looked fervently at him.

Most of the guests had arrived. The Hanson siblings had to say a few words before the celebration could begin.

However, before he could begin, a disciple ran into the hall and knelt in front of Matteo. "Report! The Elysium Gate's Sect Master, the Eternal Life Palace's Sect Master, and the Flower Mountain's Sect Master are here to greet you!"

What? The Elysium Gate? And the Eternal Life Palace?

Were they not the sects from the World Universe?

The Grand Brightness Main Hall had been in a festive mood, but it turned silent. Everyone looked at each other in confusion.

The New World and the World Universe had always been in a tense relationship. So, the sects from these two Mainlands had never had any connections with one another. The guests were bewildered when they heard those three sects had arrived at the hall.

Yvette, who was in the main guest-of-honor seat, trembled. She stood up and walked to the main hall entrance; she was anxious when she looked outside.

'The Elysium Gate's Sect Master? Darryl Darby? That can't be right! Didn't he drop into the volcano crater and died a year ago?' Yvette was confused.

Matteo was also baffled. Even though the Incandescent Sect had a vast social network, they had not heard of the Elysium Gate or the Eternal Life Palace before that.

"Sister, are they your friends? These people from the Flower Mountain and Eternal Life Palace and whatnot?" Matteo asked as he looked at Laura.

"I don't know them too..." Laura tried her best to recall those names, but nothing came to her mind.

At that moment, Justin quickly approached them and said in a panic, "Master, the Elysium Gate's Sect Master is Darryl Darby. He was rumored to have dropped into the volcano crater and died a year ago. Also, you beat up Dax Sanders and Chester Wilson previously; you even let me slap them a few times. Perhaps you have forgotten about that?"

Matteo was even more confused. "What nonsense is this? I have long forgotten about that. I do not recognize them."

Matteo was a little displeased. "Even though the Incandescent Sect is renowned and we have many friends, how can we let just any Tom, Dick, and Harry join our birthday celebration?"

Clang!

Before he could finish his sentence, a loud sound reverberated!

Someone had kicked the Grand Brightness Main Hall's door open! ❶

Chapter 910

Three men strode into the room!

On the left, the man had a giant axe in his hand; he had a murderous aura. It was Dax Sanders from the Flower Mountain!

The man on the right had a paper fan in his hand; he looked smart and gentle. It was the Eternal Life Palace Sect's Sect Master, Chester Wilson!

Darryl stood emotionlessly in the middle; his eyes were red.

"Darryl?!" Yvette jumped up; she was surprised and delighted!

'Darryl's not dead! He's alive!' Yvette did not know why, but she was overjoyed. She was so excited that she trembled. ①

Sloan, on the other side, frowned. She did not expect Darryl to survive after he fell into the volcano crater! He was the reason the New World Army had to retreat from that battle at the Wishing Star Tower! She was furious when she saw him again that day!

"Master!"

"Darryl!"

Two voices echoed at the same time—Cheryl Marks and the Elixir Sect's Sect Master, Andy Curtis!

Cheryl was ecstatic to see Darryl. The man had written the song 'As Sweet As Honey' for her; it was famous everywhere, and everyone knew how to sing it. Cheryl had dreamt of the day that her master would write her another song!

Andy was equally pleased to see Darryl. His wife had previously suffered a mysterious disease brought on by two mirrors. Darryl, who was skilled in feng shui, had saved her. After that incident, Andy and Darryl hit it off like lifelong friends. Darryl had left the Great East after that, and they had not seen each other for almost a year. Andy missed him, and he did not expect to see him there!

Everyone focused their attention on Darryl!

However, Darryl did not even react to the cries around him. His eyes were locked onto Matteo.

"None of you are friends of the Incandescent Sect. Please leave now." Laura approached them slowly.

"Well, it looks like both of you are celebrating your birthdays today." There was no emotion on Darryl's face. It felt as if he had to force those words out of his mouth. "The three of us have long heard about the Incandescent Sect's fame, and we are here to send our wishes to you."

The entire hall roared in laughter.

"So, they are here to pay their respects!"

"Well, the Incandescent Sect is so famous that any random small sect would want to kiss their ass!"

"Yes!"

Among the laughter, even Laura smiled. She said, "Since you're here to wish us, where is your gift?"

"Yes! They want to solicit the Incandescent Sect, yet they did not bring any gift? What were they thinking?!"

"Coming to a birthday celebration empty-handed; how is this acceptable?!"

A smile slowly formed on Darryl's lips as he laughed discreetly; it was a hideous smile. "Yes, one can't attend a birthday celebration, empty-handed. Of course, I brought gifts!"

"Where are they?" Laura asked as she frowned.

"Bring in the gifts!" Darryl yelled so loudly that his voice was hoarse!

Then, four Elysium Gate disciples entered the hall!

Thud!

They immediately kicked the Grand Brightness Main Hall's door to pieces.

The four disciples carried two huge coffins into the room!

Clang!

The two black coffins landed heavily on the floor; they were painted black—like death!

"This is my gift to you both!"

Darryl drew his Blood Drinking Sword; his eyes were red.

"I wish you many happy returns for the day, and may you have today's glory forever!"

Chapter 911

"Wow!"

At that moment, the whole place's atmosphere was intense!

Were those three bored with their lives that they gifted two coffins for someone's birthday?

"Sh*t! Are you looking for death?" Matteo's face looked frightening as he clenched his fist tightly!

Laura's body shook as she stood at the side; she was furious too!

"Incandescent Sect!" At that moment, the Four Warlords walked in deliberately! Zephyr looked around them and smiled coldly as he said, "These two coffins were specially made by my sect master. Cult Masters, please accept these gifts!"

Bang!

"Sh*t!" Matteo roared angrily; internal energy had started to rise in his body!

He had run in the community for so many years, so he was well respected—no one would dare disrespect him! Matteo could not control his anger when he saw those two black coffins. He stared at Darryl and said, "If you kneel and apologize right now, I'll give you an easy death!"

"An easy death?" Darryl's eyes were red as he smiled coldly. He took a step forward as he looked around him with a cold expression. "Matteo," he said as he focused his attention on the man.

"Speak quickly and be prepared to accept your death!" Matteo furrowed his brows as he clenched his fists! He burned with anger; he could no longer hold it in anymore!

Everyone's eyes were all on Darryl; they had a complicated look on their faces.

'This guy is here to challenge the Incandescent Sect!'

'Does this guy want to die?'

Darryl ignored everyone's focus on him as he continued to stare at Matteo, "I have a question for you. Did you kill a woman named Lily Lyndon a year ago? Did you do it?"

Lily Lyndon?

The image of an ugly face appeared in Matteo's mind when he heard that name. When he came back to his senses, he laughed and said, "Now I understand. You did all these because you are the ugly one's husband."

Justin had mentioned that the ugly woman's husband was named Darryl; he remembered it just then.

Matteo looked at Darryl with an arrogant expression and smiled lightly as he said, "That'

s right; I killed her."

Darryl felt a pain in his chest; he clenched his teeth as he tried his best to contain his anger. "She did nothing to you; why did you kill her?"

Matteo smiled casually as he took two steps forward. "I've never needed any reason to do anything my whole life. She was only an ugly woman; why shouldn't I kill her? You want to avenge her?"

Wow!

Darryl saw only red when he heard that. He held his fist tightly; his nails almost penetrated his flesh!

"Revenge?" Darryl clenched his teeth; he could not control his anger any longer. "Not only do I want revenge, but I will also demolish Mount Mingwang and destroy the Incandescent Sect. I want the lives of your 10 million disciples to compensate for Lily's life!"

Darryl's cold voice sounded as if he spoke from hell; it echoed throughout the entire Mount Mingwang!

Silence!

At that moment, the entire Grand Brightness Main Hall was silent.

Many of the elite members of the Sect looked at each other!

After a few seconds of silence, everyone broke into laughter!

Some of them even laughed. "What did he say? He wants to destroy the Incandescent Sect?"

"That is so funny! Where did he come from?"

"He dares to make such a statement when he is only a Level One Martial Emperor?"

More laughter ensued.

Everyone talked to each other as they laughed loudly. Matteo also laughed as he looked at Darryl and teased, "Young man, I have heard many jokes throughout my entire life, but the one you just made was the most naïve and ridiculous one I have ever heard!"

"Really?" Darryl smiled casually. The next moment, he leapt and floated in the middle of the air! His cold voice filled the entire place. "I am Darryl, the Elysium Gate's Sect Master, the Indomitable Darby! Where are you, my brothers?"

"We are here!"

Loud voices chorused in response. Then, the sound of marching footsteps broke the silence!

About 300 thousand people marched from afar, and they had weapons in hand. They appeared from all directions to surround the entire Grand Brightness Main Hall!

Zephyr led them; he held a 100-feet tall large flag that flapped in the air!

It was the Nine Dragons Justice flag!

Wow!

The entire hall was silent; all the guests sweated profusely!

Those 300 thousand people surrounded the Grand Brightness Main Hall; their revengeful aura was intimidating!

"You—" Matteo's facial expression immediately changed; he could not say a single word!

Darryl levitated mid-air as his Blood Drinking Sword rang intensely!

Chapter 912

"If you don't have anything to do with this, stay away!" Darryl almost screamed; his eyes were red!

"I do not care which sect or family you're from; if you want to help the Incandescent Sect today, then I will destroy you!"

The entire Mount Mingwang heard Darryl's voice.

Wild!

He sounded wild!

When they heard that, everyone's face changed; their breath quivered discreetly! They were silent, but they were furious!

All the guests who attended the birthday celebration at the Incandescent Sect were from famous sects from all continents; all of them were descendants of cultivators. Each one of them could easily be a warrior from somewhere!

How could someone speak to them in such a manner?

However, it seemed like Darryl treated them as if they were rubbish.

Who could stand that humiliation?

Nonetheless, no one dared to step forward!

At that moment, Laura finally gathered her thoughts. Her exquisite face paled as she pointed at Darryl. "Mister, I don't know how the Incandescent Sect had offended you, but if you retreat now, I would forgive you for your poor actions!"

Darryl's eyes were red as he laughed loudly!

"You don't know how your sect had offended me?" Darryl held the Blood Drinking Sword tightly in his hand as his entire body shook. "Lily is dead! My Lilybud is dead! Whoever stops me today will die! I will destroy the Incandescent Sect!"

Bang!

At that moment, intense internal energy flashed by as the hundred-feet tall pagoda on the ground rushed up to the clouds. It was the Seven Treasures Exquisite Pagoda—five hundred warriors emerged from it!

"Zephyr, I want you to kill all the Incandescent Sect disciples!" Darryl roared crazily. His mind was full of images of Lily; he had completely lost his mind!

"Nimbus, I want you to destroy the Grand Brightness Main Hall!

"Levin, I want you to destroy the Mingwang statue.

"Red Eye Warrior, I want you to destroy the Grand Brightness Flame!

"Henry Bi-General, I want you to demolish Mount Mingwang!

"Ten Heaven Masters, I want you to destroy the Grand Brightness Flag!

"I want the entire Incandescent Sect to repay with their lives for Lilybud's death. All of them must repay hers with their lives!

"I want the Elysium Gate Flag to fly atop Mount Mingwang!

"I want the Elysium Gate to shine on this continent! Kill them all!" Darryl roared crazily; he felt as if his heart and lungs were about to crack!

"Kill!"

As he yelled, 300 disciples stormed into the Grand Brightness Main Hall! One of the figures drew a flash of light, and he charged right in front of it!

Levin was the one who led them!

Bang!

The next second, before everyone could gather their thoughts, the Mingwang statue exploded into many pieces; there was dust everywhere!

Levin held a long blade as he looked at Darryl respectfully and shouted, "I shall do as you command!"

Bang! Bang!

At that moment, another strong figure appeared as if they were a warrior from heaven and landed on the eaves of the Grand Brightness Main Hall. He kicked heavily on the flame!

"Your wish is my command!" It was the Red Eye Warrior.

As he spoke, the Grand Brightness Flag outside the main hall was cut into pieces!

"The Ten Heaven Masters will commit to your order!"

The few hundred thousand Elysium Gate disciples drew their long blade concurrently as they shouted impressively with all their hearts. The whole Mount Mingwang could hear their shouts. "Demolish Mount Mingwang! Destroy the Incandescent Sect! Your order is our command!"

Their voices were loud—all the way to the air!

"Eternal Life Palace Sect disciples, heed my order! Destroy the Incandescent Sect! Kill!" Chester directed his energy to his abdomen as his voice traveled everywhere!

The few hundred thousand Eternal Life Palace Sect disciples started to roar as he spoke. Then, they charged fearlessly into the Grand Brightness Main Hall!

"Your order is our command!"

Chapter 913

"Flower Mountain Sect disciples, listen to my order!"

At the same time, Dax roared his command too. "Today, we shall destroy the Incandescent Sect! Kill them all without any mercy!"

"Kill!"

The loud scream could be heard everywhere; it made everyone shivered.

Matteo clenched his fists; the Incandescent Sect had a few hundred thousand disciples! However, there were only 30 thousand of them at the main altar. Even if they won the battle that day, the Incandescent Sect would be significantly affected.

Matteo sighed as his anger continued to boil!

Ever since the Incandescent Sect's formation, the society had respected them! How could he stand idly by as people attacked their main altar? Even though it would severely affect the sect, he would still battle to the end!

"Incandescent Sect disciples, kill!" Matteo shouted coldly. As he spoke, ten of thousand of Incandescent Sect members charged from the back of the altar, both parties started to fight immediately!

The sounds of metals clashed as weapons struck, and painful shouts echoed throughout the entire Mount Mingwang!

All the guests were stunned; they immediately rushed to leave the main hall. They could still watch the battle from afar.

None of the guests was impressed when they first saw Darryl and his brothers.

However, when the Four Warlords and Red Eye Warrior appeared with a few hundred thousand disciples, everyone was stunned.

'Who is this Darryl? How could he gather so many elite warriors?'

It was not only that!

Right at that moment, someone shouted, "Brother Darryl!"

Among the guests, Elixir Sect's Sect Master, Andy Curtis, marched forward with a long white spear in his hand. "Brother Darryl, I shall assist you!"

Andy looked around him and shouted, "Elixir Sect disciples, listen to my order! Help Darryl to destroy the Incandescent Sect!"

"Yes!"

A few hundred Elixir Sect disciples appeared and joined the Elysium Gate troops! Even though Andy had only brought a few hundred people with him, they were Elixir Sect's elders! All of them were elite warriors!

Andy felt a little emotional! He did not expect to see Darryl there. He also did not expect him to be a sect master.

Darryl had saved his wife at the Great East, and he had promised he would help Darryl whenever he needed aid. Andy was a man of his word; he would always do what he had said!

Furthermore, he did not have a close relationship with the Incandescent Sect anyway. He only wanted to connect with them; that was why he attended the birthday celebration dinner. Of course, he would always be on Darryl's side!

Everyone was shocked when they saw the Elixir Sect disciples join the battle. They focused their attention on Darryl; they were stunned and confused.

'Even the Elixir Sect is helping Darryl?'

'What charm does this Darryl have?'

Even the Elixir Sect's Sect Master had decided to help him. One should know that the Elixir Sect was one of the Great East's four major sects.

Oh!

Matteo's facial expression immediately changed when he saw that. He smiled coldly and said, "Great! Darryl, right? I can tell you that I was the one who killed that ugly woman. What do you want to do about it? You're here to challenge the Incandescent Sect? I think you're looking for death!"

Bang!

As he spoke, a strong aura circled Matteo! He lifted his hand fiercely and punched it at Darryl!

At the same time, Laura walked forward as she looked Darryl coldly. "Nothing but rubbish! How dare you come here and disturb the Incandescent Sect. None of you would be able to leave here alive today!"

Laura's face looked cold! A sword appeared in her hands before she leapt into mid-air and charged toward Darryl. She aimed it at his chest!

Yvette bit her lips as she stood as the side; worry started to erupt in her heart.

Chapter 914

She had only heard about the news that Matteo had killed Lily.

Yvette had an excellent relationship with Lily when she was in the World Universe.

She was upset and angry when she heard that Matteo had killed Lily.

Yvonne hoped that Darryl would be able to avenge her friend.

However, her heart also felt conflicted as she did not wish the Incandescent Sect to be destroyed!

Before she got there, the New World Emperor had explicitly mentioned that with the barriers of the nine continents gone, the situation was quite ambiguous. The royal family wanted to build relationships with more sects to strengthen their position as rulers.

The Incandescent Sect was the top sect of the New World; it had an ancient history and deep foundation. If they were willing to support the Emperor, then the New World Emperor would have nothing left to fear!

Yvette kept that in mind as she was about to rush forward to stop the battle.

"Princess!"

However, Sloan immediately stopped Yvette. Her face darkened when she said, "Princess, no one person can stop this battle now. Don't go. You have to be careful lest you get injured in the crossfire."

Sigh!

Yvette sighed softly, but she stepped backward. Her heart clenched.

Bang!

Darryl lifted his hand and hit back against Matteo's fists!

A loud bang was heard the moment both palms met. Intense internal energy vibrated and affected the entire place!

Matteo and Darryl shouted as both of them bounced several steps backward!

None of them stood at an advantage for that hit!

However, Matteo was shocked. He was already a Level Three Martial Emperor, and he had extremely strong internal energy; he should be able to go head-to-head against a Level Four Martial Emperor. How could Darryl have matched his attack?

"You will die today, Matteo!" Darryl shouted. With the Blood Drinking Sword in his hand, he charged forward again.

"Come on!" Matteo replied coldly; he did not show any signs of fear!

Meanwhile, Dax, Chester, Red Eye Warrior, Blazing Snake Queen and other Martial Emperors burned with rage as they surrounded Laura.

Even though Laura was a woman, she was the strongest amongst them! She smiled briefly at them. "None of you will leave here alive."

The air behind her started to spin and formed a large black tornado! Vast internal energy gathered in the middle of it. That was the Incandescent Sect's highest martial arts level—the Immeasurable Universe Power!

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Chester, Dax and the other Martial Emperors charged toward her, but none of them led the battle!

Simultaneously, at the other fight.

Darryl and Matteo had battled intensively for a few minutes, but neither of them could control the other.

Matteo was a Level Three Martial Emperor, which meant he was two Martial Emperors level higher than Darryl.

However, Darryl had cultivated the Pure Energy Scripture, so he had extremely powerful internal energy; he was on par with Matteo.

At that moment, none of them could defeat the other, and both of them got impatient.

"You must die!" Matteo's eyes were blood-red. He shouted and turned his wrist. A purple and red flame appeared on his palm; he immediately threw the flame at Darryl!

Bang!

The purple-red flame had intimidating power! Wherever it passed, the air immediately sliced open!

Everyone in the New World had heard about Matteo's purple-red flame. It was his signature attack; he was the only one in the New World who had that!

The flame was also in the Enchanted Flame list, and it was at the seventh spot—the Purple Cloud Enchanted Flame.

Bang!

When the Purple Cloud Enchanted Flame appeared, the air burned! The arrogant and unique aura made all the people who watched the fight worried and shocked!

Chapter 915

"Matteo is going to use his special technique!"

"This Darryl person has forced Matteo to use the Enchanted Flame!"

"Yes, he was able to force him to use the Purple Cloud Enchanted Flame. Even if Darryl were to lose, he would not be ashamed of this fight."

At that moment, everyone around them discussed among themselves!

They had already expected the outcome for the battle in front of them.

Once Matteo used the Purple Cloud Enchanted Flame, Darryl would definitely lose the battle!

The voices of those people's discussion could be heard from below, but it seemed like Darryl did not hear anything. He smiled; he was not panicked at all.

"Darryl, watch out!"

"Be careful, Master!"

The Purple Cloud Enchanted Flame almost hit Darryl's body as Yvette and Cheryl shouted at the same time!

The enchanted flame was one of the top seven enchanted flames. If it were to hit Darryl, he would major injuries even if he survived it.

However, no one expected Darryl did not even try to avoid the hit but cracked a smile instead.

"Duck, Darryl!" Yvette was worried as she stomped her feet. 'Why is he so silly? Doesn't he know that is the enchanted flame?!"

"Princess," Sloan, who stood at the side, said. "Darryl must have thought that it is just an ordinary flame. Perhaps he thought he could block the fire, so he did not avoid it. He is so ignorant; he would suffer if the Purple Cloud Enchanted Flame were to hit him."

Suddenly, Sloan paused! She looked at Darryl and did not say a single word.

Bang!

The Purple Cloud Enchanted Flame hit Darryl's body hard. A loud bang was heard, and thick smoke filled the area.

When the smoke dispersed, everyone saw Darryl in mid-air; he was not hurt at all!

What?

How could that be possible?

Matteo was shocked; he was extremely terrified.

He realized that the Purple Cloud Enchanted Flame was not a threat to Darryl at all!

How could that be?

Matteo did not know that Darryl had absorbed the White Lily Cold Flame. Even if he did not release the White Lily Cold Flame, the Purple Cloud Enchanted Flame still could not have injured Darryl!

"Die, Matteo!"

Darryl exploded as he charged forward and hit Matteo's chest!

Bang!

Matteo was still in shock, so he did not manage to react. With a deep shout, his entire body was stunned as he flew a few hundred feet backward like a loose kite. Then he landed heavily on the ground in the Grand Brightness Main Hall.

The place went completely silent!

The entire Mount Mingwang was utterly quiet!

Matteo was well-known in the New World. He had been in its society for a very long time; he was remarkably powerful and undefeated.

However, he had lost in that fight!

Matteo forced himself to stand up and looked at Darryl furiously. He wanted to open his mouth to speak, but instead, he vomited a mouthful of blood.

Darryl's punch almost broke his rib!

Matteo did not have any strength left to continue with the battle anymore.

Darryl landed on the ground gracefully. He stood there cold and emotionless, and he had the Blood Drinking Sword in his hand. He charged and aimed the blade at Matteo's chest!

Once his sword pierced through that man's body, he would definitely die!

Matteo saw the Blood Drinking Sword inched closer to him, but he had no energy left to avoid the blade!

"Master!"

Justin, who was in another fight nearby, shouted. Then he jumped forward and stood in front of Matteo to block the attack.

Bang! The sword pierced through Justin. He shouted in pain as blood started to ooze from the wound!

"Justin!"

Matteo screamed; his eyes were red as he stared at Darryl!

Justin was his disciple—his only disciple! ❶

"Master, go! Just leave me! Go, quickly!" Justin stuttered as he spoke. Then, he took his last breath and died! 1

Chapter 916

"Justin!" Matteo screamed at the sky as he hugged Justin tightly; his eyes were bloodshot-red!

"I will get my revenge for this or I will die, Darryl!" Matteo held on despite the pain in his body. In a flash, he dashed toward Laura and shouted, "Sister, don't continue with this battle any more! Let's go!"

When he realized that the Purple Cloud Enchanted Flame could not harm Darryl, Matteo knew that he would not win the battle!

His anger continued to boil when he saw his opponent killed his own disciple.

However, it did not seem like the Incandescent Sect was in a favorable situation.

If he were to stay back in the battle, it would only lead to his death.

The most important thing was to remain alive. He would have time to rise again and avenge his disciple!

Laura's body trembled when she heard Matteo scream at her.

She looked around her; many of the Incandescent Sect disciples were injured or dead. There were bodies everywhere in Mount Wangming!

They had never been attacked in such a manner before since the Incandescent Sect was formed!

Laura bit her lips; she was furious as she said coldly, "No, I must kill them today!"

Bang!

As she spoke, a terrifying burning aura exploded from her body. The air around her started to burn.

Then, a black flame appeared as it gathered in Laura's palm! The flame was pure black; it had no other color!

The Incandescent Sect's main power was the fire that had been burning forever—also known as the Grand Brightness Flame.

The sect was known for their three types of enchanted flame!

The first was the Grand Brightness Flame, which burned in the main cauldron.

Next, it was Matteo's Purple Cloud Enchanted Flame.

Then, the third one was Laura's Hell Flame! It was in the top three of the Enchanted Flame List.

"Is that the Hell Flame?"

"What a strong power!"

Almost immediately, those who stood far from the fight began to shout. They had heard about Laura's Hell Flame, but none of them had seen it before that! Since the Hell Flame was released, the burning flame made everyone feel suffocated!

Yvette, who stood at the side, started to tremble. "Is that—is that the Hell Flame?"

Sloan nodded and said, "That's right. That is the Hell Flame. Historically, only the Incandescent Sect Master could practice it. The Hell Flame, and Matteo's Purple Cloud Enchanted Flame—even though both are enchanted flame, they are of different levels!"

Sloan looked at the black flame and said softly, "Darryl might have been lucky when he blocked the Purple Cloud Enchanted Flame. With the Hell Flame, there is a high chance that he would die."

Sloan sighed after she said that.

Hell Flame was third on the Enchanted Flame List; it had terrifying power!

Even though Darryl had help from his powerful disciples, it was still difficult for them to destroy the Incandescent Sect.

Not only might he not be able to get his revenge, but his life could end as well.

"Hell Flame... That is the Hell Flame!"

"We are very fortunate to be able to see all three enchanted flames at this birthday reception."

"I am afraid this could be the end for Darryl!"

The crowd shouted and sighed.

Those who attended the birthday reception were the sect masters from various Sect. All of them were knowledgeable and well-skilled, but they were all stunned when they saw the Hell Flame!

"I want all of you to repay the lives of our sect's disciples!" Laura's cold voice echoed. She twisted her wrist slightly and released the Hell Flame; the fire charged at Dax and Chester!

Everyone there was anxious for the two men!

Chester's facial expression immediately changed; he wanted to avoid the attack, but the black flame was too fast. In the blink of an eye, it had appeared in front of him.

"Brother Chester, step back!" a cold voice shouted.

The next second, a figure appeared in front of Chester and the rest of the disciples!

It was Darryl!

"Hell Fire?" Darryl smiled arrogantly. He lifted his hand casually!

Bang!

The next moment, a white flame appeared on Darryl's palm! 7

Chapter 917

The white flame jumped into the air before it settled in the shape of a lily!

When the white flame appeared, the surrounding temperature increased drastically!

It was the White Lily Cold Flame!

Wow!

Once the White Lily Cold Flame appeared, it immediately absorbed the Hell Flame.

Wow!

The huge Grand Brightness Main Hall was deadly silent!

One could even hear it if a needle were to drop onto the ground!

'A white flame? Is that the world's top enchanted flame—the White Lily Cold Flame?'

The thought appeared in everyone's mind almost at the same time! Everyone was shocked; none of them could say a single word!

For the past few thousand years, no one had ever possessed the White Lily Cold Flame!

That was the world's top enchanted flame!

"Darryl—" Sloan sighed as she looked at Darryl; she looked puzzled.

The Darryl she knew a year ago had been as weak as an ant; she could have killed him at any time she wanted!

However, a year later, the man had turned into such a strong person!

Laura's body shook; she could not battle anymore, so she grabbed Matteo and flew down the mountain.

'Darryl, Elysium Gate, Eternal Life Palace Sect, Flower Mountain Sect! I shall remember you!'

Laura bit her lips; her face was pale!

When he realized that the siblings wanted to run away, Darryl immediately leapt after them with the Blood Drinking Sword in his hand. However, two men immediately blocked his pursuit!

They were the Incandescent Sect's Unrivalled Heaven and Earth! They were the

sect's deputy sect master, and they were Laura's loyal disciples!

When they knew that Darryl wanted to go after Laura and Matteo, the Unrivalled Heaven and Earth would defend them with their lives!

"Get lost!" Darryl was furious; the air around him vibrated as a strong and powerful nine-foot white dragon charged forward!

Bang!

The Unrivalled Heaven and Earth shouted as their body flew into the air! Fresh blood sprayed crazily; both of them died on the spot!

Darryl was a Level One Martial Emperor. With his pure internal energy, his Ascension of the Nine Dragon was many times more powerful than before!

Argh!

Darryl's eyes were red. Even though the Unrivalled Heaven and Earth had managed to stop him for a short moment, Laura and Matteo had managed to get away!

Bang!

Dax was furious; he punched on the pillar with his fist. "Sh*t, just a little longer, we could have sought revenge for Lily. Now the siblings are gone!"

Darryl took a deep breath as he looked at the direction Matteo and his sister had left. His face was extremely dark!

The battle at Mount Mingwang had gradually ended.

Both Laura and her brother had managed to get away, the Unrivalled Heaven and Earth were dead, and as for the Incandescent Sect's 300 thousand disciples—some were dead, some were injured, and others had run away. None of the Incandescent Sect could defeat Debra when she joined the Elysium Gate in battle. None of the disciples were alive on Mount Mingwang.

The Grand Brightness Main Hall had been completely destroyed too.

The Grand Brightness Flag was also damaged.

At that moment, it was the Elysium Gate's flag that flapped proudly on Mount Mingwang!

The air was filled with the metallic scent of blood. Wow!

Chapter 918

When the guests saw that, none of them dared to breathe!

Darryl had destroyed the famous Incandescent Sect.

No one would believe it if they did not witness that themselves!

The Incandescent Sect disciples were also killed, and both of their sect masters were injured before they managed to run away. The Unrivalled Heaven and Earth were also dead!

Darryl became famous after the battle.

"Sect Master Darby, we shall leave now. We will not disturb you; we will not disturb you."

A random guest said that as he bowed to Darryl. The rest of the guests followed suit and left as well.

"Sh*t!"

After everyone was gone, Dax punched the wall with his fists. "No, we can't just let Matteo and his sister get away with this! I will go after them!"

Then, he gathered his disciples and headed down the mountain.

Dax had a bad temper. He had prepared to destroy the Incandescent Sect for a long time, but Matteo and his sister had run away. He could not accept that fact.

Darryl immediately shouted, "No, Dax!"

Laura and her brother had been gone for a long time then; it was impossible for them to catch up to the siblings.

However, Dax did not listen to Darryl; he was too angry. He waved his hand and led a few hundred thousand disciples down the mountain.

"Dax!" Chester had no choice; he gave Darryl a bitter smile and said, "He needs to change his bad temper. I'll go with him, Darryl. You can clean up the mess here."

Then, Chester gathered some disciples and rushed toward Dax's direction.

Darryl sighed as he looked around.

The Incandescent Sect disciples at the main altar had been completely wiped out. Many of the Elysium Gate, Eternal Life Palace Sect and Flower Mountain Sect's disciples were injured too.

Most of the guests had left. Only Sect Master Andy from the Elixir Sect, Yvette

and a few others were still there.

"Brother Darryl!"

Andy walked toward the man and laughed as he spoke to Darryl, "That was a great battle."

His eyes were full of compliments.

Darryl's White Lily Cold Flame had defeated Laura's Hell Flame quite easily. What an eye-opening sight, indeed!

Darryl smiled; he appreciated the compliment. "Thank you for Elixir Sect's assistance, Brother Curtis."

Andy laughed again as he waved his hand. "You are welcome, Brother. From now onward, the Elixir Sect and the Elysium Gate shall be allies forever! If you do need our help in the future, the Elixir Sect will come to your aid wherever we are!"

"Great!" Darryl nodded.

He knew that Andy was a worthy friend.

After some friendly banter, Andy left with his disciples.

"Yvette!" After Andy was gone, Darryl headed straight for Yvette. He looked at her and asked, "Where are Yvonne and Monica?"

Darryl's eyes showed only desperation!

Yvette was the Princess; she would definitely know their whereabouts!

Yvette bit her lips; she was about to reply when a cold voice interrupted her. "Darryl, how dare you speak to the Princess in such a manner!"

It was Sloan!

Sloan still did not know anything about Darryl's relationship with Yvette. She only knew that Yvette was the highly-cherished and honored Princess.

How could Darryl question her in such a tone? He had crossed the line!

Even though Darryl had destroyed the Incandescent Sect and was extremely powerful, Sloan only saw him as an average person. He had no business with the Princess! She would not hesitate to teach him a lesson if he were to disrespect the Princess!

Darryl ignored Sloan.

"Yvette, tell me quickly! Where are Yvonne and Monica?" Darryl asked again as he looked at Yvette!

Yvette's red lips parted slightly as she smiled and said, "We have not seen each

other for two years, Darryl. Now that you've noticed me, shouldn't you ask about my well-being? What's with the questions?"

Chapter 919

Ask about her well-being?

Darryl did not know whether to laugh or cry when he looked at Yvette and said, "You are the Princess, so you have many people to serve you. You don't need my regards. I just want to know where Yvonne and Monica are now."

Darryl smiled, and he continued to tease Yvette. "Besides, even though we know each other quite well, one should only express their concerns to their family members. Do you think of me as your father?"

Darryl laughed.

Back when they were at ZhaoYun's ancient tomb, Yvette had been under the Illusional Formation's influence; she had mistaken Darryl as the New World Emperor. She even addressed Darryl as her father.

Darryl still remembered that scene vividly.

Wow!

Yvette's face blushed when she heard that; she was extremely embarrassed.

'Darryl still likes to flirt as he did before; I should not have teased him just now!'

Sloan was furious; her body shook lightly. She pointed at Darryl and scolded him. "Darryl, how dare you tease the Princess and humiliate the royal family!"

'Such bravery! He teased the Princess and compared himself to the Emperor! He has overstepped the line!'

The rest of the Elysium Gate disciples watched them cheerfully. They wanted to laugh, but they dared not. They all looked at Darryl with respect.

'How daring is Brother Darryl? He even dared to tease the Princess.'

"General Sloan, why are you upset?" Darryl was calm as he smiled at Yvette. "I am joking with the Princess."

Then, Darryl's face turned somber as he turned toward Yvette and said, "That's right, Princess. You do not mind that, right? Not with our relationship?"

Yvette bit her lips; she was speechless.

"Brother Darryl!"

Suddenly, Nimbus approached them quickly and said worriedly, "Brother Darryl, we found Incandescent Sect's secret tunnel at the hill behind the Grand Brightness Main Hall. We heard some funny noises and wild beasts' roars from

inside. We do not dare to enter it blindly."

Secret tunnel? Wild beasts?

Darryl was stunned as he heard that.

The Incandescent Sect had existed for a few thousand years; their history went back to the ancient years. That was the sect's main altar, and they had found a secret tunnel guarded by wild beasts. The sect must have hidden something of value in that tunnel.

Darryl got excited when he thought about that. "Come on, take me there. I'll take a look at it."

Nimbus nodded and led the way.

Sloan and Yvette looked at each other. Then, they followed them quickly too.

Once they were at the back of the hill, they saw a huge altar. Then they realized there was a deep and quiet tunnel under the counter.

Roar! Roar!

Sounds of what they presumed as wild beasts' roar echoed deep inside the tunnel. Everyone there was terrified!

Sloan furrowed her brows and mumbled, "Is this the Incandescent Sect's Grand Brightness Secret Tunnel?"

"What is the Grand Brightness Secret Tunnel?" Yvette asked.

Sloan looked conflicted as she said, "That is the Incandescent Sect's forbidden area. Only their sect masters could enter it. A rumor said they had trapped a fierce beast in there. Perhaps that was the beast's roar that we just heard?"

What? A fierce beast?

Yvette was stunned. She paused for a moment before she asked, "Sister Sloan, do you know what kind of fierce beast is trapped in the secret tunnel?"

Chapter 920

Sloan looked at the secret tunnel and said calmly, "According to the historical record, about 500 years ago, the New World faced a fierce beast that plagued the society—it killed many innocent people! Later, the Incandescent Sect worked with other sects to capture the beast and trapped it in the Grand Brightness Secret Tunnel."

"Sister Sloan." Yvette turned toward her and asked, "But that was 500 years ago; the fierce beast should have died by now..."

Sloan shook her head and said thoughtfully, "Princess, there are many elite people in this society, and the higher their cultivation, the longer they live. It is the same with many wild beasts that cultivate—we call them enchanted beasts. Most of these beasts are at Martial Saints or Martial Emperor level, or even higher! And they can live for a very long time too."

Then, Sloan sighed before she continued to say, "According to the records, the wild beast from 500 years ago was very powerful! Many Martial Emperor warriors died when they tried to defeat it. Given its power, it can easily live for a few hundred years."

Darryl, who had listened closely, was curious about that.

'A fierce enchanted beast? I must take a good look at it.'

Then, Darryl stepped into the entrance in huge strides.

"Darryl, stop!"

He had taken only two steps forward when a sweet voice shouted from behind him. Then, Sloan immediately rushed forward.

When Sloan reached him, there were doubts written all over her face. "What are you doing?"

Darryl was not happy when he saw Sloan's arrogance, but he smiled. "I'm going to see the wild beast, of course. Do you still need to ask?"

Sloan was worried; she stomped her feet. "No, you can't go!"

"Why not?" Darryl asked with furrowed brows.

It was funny—the Incandescent Sect had been destroyed, and their main altar became part of the New World's land. Darryl could do whatever he wanted on his own land, so why would he not go there?

Sigh!

Sloan took a deep breath; she tried her best to calm down. Then, she said thoughtfully, "What if the creature in the tunnel is the fierce beasts that the Incandescent Sect and other sects defeated 500 years ago? You can't go in; that beast is too scary. The people would suffer if you accidentally let it out. Can you bear the consequences then?"

Darryl smiled lightly. "You don't have to worry about that. Don't forget—we have destroyed the Incandescent Sect. Mount Mingwang now belongs to the Elysium Gate, including the fierce beast in the secret tunnel."

Other than the differences in their opinions, Darryl had a good impression of Sloan.

However, he could not stand her arrogance.

Most importantly, he had heard many myths about enchanted beasts, but he had never met one.

An enchanted beast was a wild beast that cultivated. He had owned a snow eagle, but it was only a rare eagle. It was easily trained and could communicate with humans, but it was not an enchanted beast.

Darryl would never miss the opportunity to see the enchanted beast in the secret tunnel for himself.

He did not wait for Sloan to respond; he ordered his disciples, "Guard the secret tunnel entrance. No one can enter it without my consent."

Then, Darryl marched confidently into the tunnel.

"Yes!"

His disciples answered unanimously; they immediately went to stand guard at the entrance.

"You—"

Sloan was so angry that her body shook.

Yvette furrowed her brows; she was also frustrated. She had not seen Darryl for a year, but he did not change one bit. He was still so arrogant.

"Princess!"

Sloan bit her lips. Then, she called out to Yvette as if she had decided on a matter. "I'll take a look inside as well. You should wait for me here."

Sloan's primary responsibility during their trip to the Incandescent Sect was to keep Yvette safe.

Since the Princess knew Darryl well, she would be safe there. It was different for

the fierce beast in the secret tunnel; it had to do with the safety of everyone else in the world.

If Darryl were to release the fierce beast accidentally, they would all suffer the consequences!

She would have to enter the secret tunnel!

Chapter 921

Yvette was worried when she heard that Sloan wanted to enter the secret tunnel. "Sister Sloan, there is a fierce beast in there; you must be careful."

Sloan nodded silently. In a flash of light, she flew toward the secret tunnel entrance.

"What? You—"

"Stop!"

The disciples at the entrance could not react in time. Sloan lifted her hand, and they bounced back before they landed on the ground!

When the disciples managed to get back on their feet, Sloan had already entered the secret tunnel!

Meanwhile, Darryl—who had gone into the secret tunnel earlier—saw a long passageway in front of him. The tunnel was about a few hundred feet long; long lights hung on both sides of the rocky wall.

As he walked deeper into the tunnel, its space got wider; at the same time, he could feel a wave of heat surged from the front.

Darryl felt as if he was back in the volcano.

Bang!

He felt a vibration of aura behind him.

Darryl immediately turned; he furrowed his brows.

An attractive and alluring figure approached him speedily.

It was Sloan!

Darryl frowned when he saw her. "Why are you here?"

'Didn't I tell them not to let anyone in? Why did they let her in?'

Sloan looked at Darryl and said arrogantly, "Do you think your disciples can stop me if I wanted to come in?"

"You—" Darryl sighed; he was worried. 'Sloan had broken into the tunnel?'

Roar!

Suddenly, a terrifying roar echoed from deep in the tunnel!

The area around them got significantly hotter.

The roar.

The trapped beast must be extraordinarily wild and fierce!

Darryl felt his heart raced, and the blood in his entire body boiled.

'That roar is so intense; it is definitely not a normal wild animal, like a tiger or a leopard.'

As he thought about that, Darryl picked up his pace.

He was no longer interested in nonsense conversation with Sloan. He only wanted to take a look at the mythical enchanted beast.

Sloan's face darkened, but she followed behind him.

The two of them soon arrived at the end of the secret tunnel. They were in complete shock; their bodies stood frozen in surprise.

Wow!

Darryl gasped!

He saw four gigantic metal chains on the sides of the wall in front of him. Those chains were shiny black!

Darryl immediately realized that the chains were made from hundred-thousand-year-old metal.

The gigantic metal chains held a giant beast that looked like a tiger in captivity. It had a pure black body and a pair of wings that were as white as snow. Its entire body was surrounded by blood-red flame.

That intimidating roar had come from the giant beast.

It was over ten feet wide and three to four feet tall. There was also a unique mark at its forehead. It had bright, shiny eyes—strong and intimidating—it looked so grand and powerful.

Wow!

Darryl was stunned for more than ten seconds before he could gather his thoughts. He gasped again; he was very impressed.

What? Was that the Rocky?

Chapter 922

At that moment, Darryl felt his breath tremble!

Darryl had read about the Rocky in some ancient books.

There was a myth about the Four Great Godly Beasts. They were the Azure Dragon, the White Tiger, the Vermilion Bird and the Black Tortoise. At the same time, there were Four Great Fierce Beasts too.

The Rocky was the Four Great Fierce Beasts' leader.

According to the historical records, the Rocky resembled a tiger the most. However, he had a much bigger body and a pair of wings on his back!

"Rocky!"

Sloan stood at the side; her body shivered lightly. Her voice also trembled as she said, "I never thought that the beast that the Incandescent Sect and other sects had managed to capture was one of the Four Great Fierce Beasts—the Rocky. It must have been trapped in here for more than 500 years, and yet it still looks so strong!"

Sloan bit her lips. She was a female warlord, so she had extensive knowledge about many things. Of course, she knew about the Rocky!

Darryl did not speak; he was still in shock. His heart also felt so conflicted.

He never imagined that he would get to see the fierce beast that was always mentioned in the myths with his own eyes!

Roar!

The Rocky roared so loudly that it could shake heaven and earth!

Bang!

The Rocky sprayed a ball of red flame from his mouth and aimed it at Darryl and Sloan!

The flame carried the beast's perpetual anger and frustration!

"The Blood Flame? Rocky had just sprayed the Blood Flame!"

The Blood Flame was number ten on the Enchanted Flame List. Its power was intimidating. However, it still had much lower power than the White Lily Cold Flame.

Darryl's White Lily Cold Flame could easily destroy the hundred-thousand-year-old metal chains, but the Blood Flame could not break them.

Bang!

As she saw the Blood Flame, Sloan waved her sleeves to form a protective shield to block it.

"It has been trapped in here for 500 years. It must hate humans very much; that was probably why it attacked when it saw us," Sloan spoke softly.

Then, her facial expression changed.

Her protective shield could not stop the Blood Flame at all!

Bang!

It had only been ten seconds, but Sloan protective shield could no longer bear the pressure. Cracks had started to appear.

Sloan was worried; she looked at Darryl and said, "Use your White Lily Cold Flame, quickly!"

The White Lily Cold Flame could absorb other flames; one could say it was the enchanted flames' enemy. If Darryl took action, they would not have to worry about the Blood Flame. The White Lily Cold Flame would definitely be able to absorb the Blood Flame.

Darryl felt happy when he saw her worried face. He pretended to be difficult and started to spout nonsense. "I can only use the White Lily Cold Flame every three days. I had already used it when I fought against the Incandescent Sect's Sect Master. I can't use it anymore."

What?

Sloan's body shivered, and her face paled when she heard that.

Darryl was so happy that he wanted to laugh when he saw her reaction. He had lied to her. Since he had absorbed the White Lily Cold Flame entirely, he could use it at any time he wanted. Sloan had been very arrogant most of the time, and she had also broken into the tunnel. Darryl wanted to scare her so that he could pull her arrogance down a notch.

Wow...

Then, Sloan's protective shield shattered completely; the Blood Flame continued to charge toward them!

Sloan was very worried. She immediately activated her internal energy and formed a protective shield around her body.

However, the protective shield layer that Sloan had activated could only form on the skin on her body. That also meant that the shield could only protect her, but

not her clothes!

In the blink of an eye, the edge of Sloan's attire started to melt!

"Shut your eyes, Darryl!" Sload said as she bit her lips.

Chapter 923

'Shut my eyes?'

When Sload said that, Darryl immediately took a look at her.

One would say that Sloan had an exquisite body.

"You—" Sloan's face blushed; she regretted it. She would not have entered the secret tunnel if she had known that would happen.

Darryl smiled at her; he stared at her for a while before he burst out in laughter. Then, he raised his hand, and a ball of white flame surfaced on his palm!

"Darryl! You—" Sloan was annoyed; she stomped her feet. "What is wrong with you? Didn't you say that you could not release the White Lily Cold Flame? What is that in your hand then?"

She was furious, but she was embarrassed as well.

Sloan bit her lips; she continued to scold Darryl in her mind!

'How dare you lie to me!'

Darryl smiled. "I am sorry, General Sloan. I didn't know that would happen too. I panicked, and suddenly, I can release the White Lily Cold Flame again."

As he spoke, he removed the White Lily Cold Flame!

"What are you doing, Darryl? Why did you remove the White Lily Cold Flame? Release it quickly to absorb this flame." Sloan continued to sound worried.

"I don't need to release it; the Blood Flame will not hurt me," Darryl said with a smile.

"What about me?" Sloan had no other words for him.

Darryl had the White Lily Cold Flame in his body, so no other enchanted flame could hurt him. However, Sloan did not have the same luxury. She had no choice but to form a protective shield around her body. It could temporarily block the Blood Flame, but it would not last very long!

When she saw Darryl's smile, she knew that he wanted her to beg him for his help.

'I am a female general—the best female war goddess! How can I bow to his request?'

Sloan clenched her teeth and continued to activate her internal energy to strengthen the protective shield around her body to defend against the Blood Flame.

After about ten seconds, Sloan's body turned red; she looked like she was in distress.

It was apparent that she could not stand it any longer.

Roar! Roar!

The Rocky continued to roar as if it had gone crazy; more fiery flames were launched toward the two humans.

When he saw that, Darryl smiled and said, "General Sloan, there is no need for you to suffer. Just join me in my protective shield."

Darryl waved his hand to form a protective shield layer as he spoke. However, it was a rather small shield; it could probably only fit Darryl.

Powerful!

Sloan blushed.

If she were to join him in such a small shield, they would not be able to help but to touch each other.

That was horrible of Darryl!

He must have done it on purpose!

'I have consumed almost all of my internal energy to defend against the Blood Flame. I will be burnt to death if I don't join him.'

Sloan had to accept defeat. She bit her lips and entered Darryl's protective shield.

What a lovely smell!

Darryl detected a pleasant scent approached him. He was attracted to it; his eyes focused on Sloan as she stood close to him.

He must admit that Sloan had a perfect body figure.

Their bodies touched each other; how romantic! If anyone were near to them, they would be shocked.

The arrogant warrior goddess, Sloan, had compromised with Darryl's request.

Sloan bit her lips until it almost bled when she felt Darryl's eyes on her. She felt uneasy, but she dared not move.

If she were to move, she might be out of the shield's area of protection, and the Blood Flame might burn her then.

"I warn you, Darryl! Don't get any funny thoughts; otherwise, I will not let you off easily."

"I don't lack women, why would I get any funny thoughts about you? You're overthinking this. Don't tell me that you have fallen in love with me."

"You—"

"Don't move. If this protective shield breaks, we may be burned to our deaths."

"You're doing this on purpose. You have the White Lily Cold Flame; why would you be scared of the flame burning you to your death?"

Chapter 924

Darryl and Sloan spent the next few minutes in an argument before the Blood Flame finally subsided.

"Great!"

Darryl smiled and removed the protective shield. "Looks like we are fine now."

The distance between Sloan and Darryl had widened. The woman blushed as she grabbed Darryl's clothes. She tore his jacket from him and put it on her own body. Her face was as red as an apple.

"Do not think about mentioning this incident to anyone else!" Sloan glared at Darryl.

Sloan felt extremely shameful and upset.

She was the warrior goddess, but she had stood so close to Darryl for such a long time.

If the news were to spread, how could she still lead the three armies?

Darryl smiled and replied, "What happened just now? I didn't think I did anything to you."

He wanted to laugh.

He did think that Sloan had such an interesting personality.

She was the warrior goddess, and everyone respected her. However, her cute and embarrassed expression had been very alluring too.

"You—" Sloan bit her lips; she was furious, but she was dumbstruck as well.

Darryl was right; he did not do anything to her when they stood so close together behind the tiny protective shield.

However...

Sloan's heartbeat raced when she thought about the previous intimate situation. She felt so shameful and angry.

"I did not expect both of you could defend yourselves against my Blood Flame!"

Suddenly, they heard a low voice from deep in the tunnel.

Who was that?

Darryl and Sloan were shocked; they turned their heads toward the sound, and

they were stunned.

They saw the Rocky; it was still chained by the ancient metal. The beast stared back at them. It opened its enormous mouth and uttered, "It has been 500 years. Each time a new sect master is installed in the Incandescent Sect, they would come here and make me submit to them. However, most of them can't even defend themselves against my Blood Flame. Are you both the current sect masters? I can tell you right now, even though you've managed to deflect my attack, I will never submit to you."

The Rocky's eyes shone with arrogance as it spoke.

Sh*t!

It could speak?

Had he turned into a god or something?

Darryl was terrified. He gulped as his limbs froze; he could not speak at all.

Sloan shivered too; she was frightened as well.

The next second, Sloan managed to gather her thoughts before she said softly, "The myth said that the Rocky is an enchanted beast. His intellect is not below humans; hence he could speak. I thought it was only a myth; I can't believe it's real!"

When Darryl heard that, he took a deep breath and looked at the Rocky. He gathered his thoughts before he bowed politely and said, "Elder Rocky. You have misunderstood. We are not with the Incandescent Sect. Well, I have just destroyed the Incandescent Sect just now."

Darryl's heart still trembled even though he had heard Sloan's explanation about the beast's ability to speak the human language.

Not only could it speak, but it had also lived for such a long time. Darryl's heart continued to tremble; he did not know how he should address it. Hence, he greeted it as an elder.

Besides that, Darryl had also managed to figure out things from the Rocky's previous conversation.

The enchanted beast had been trapped in the Incandescent Sect's secret tunnel for 500 years. All of the Incandescent Sect's previous sect masters had tried to tame it, but none of them was successful.

"What did you say?"

The Rocky's brilliant eyes shone delightfully as it observed Darryl. "You have destroyed the Incandescent Sect?"

Darryl could feel the beast's fierce aura. It had killed many people before that, and it had been trapped in the tunnel for a very long time. The intimidating aura on its body almost suffocated the man.

However, Darryl did not feel as if he was in any danger at all.

Instead, he thought that the Rocky sounded excited.

Suddenly, it opened its big mouth and laughed out loud. "A long time ago, the Incandescent Sect joined hands with other sects to ambush me. They separated my husband and me and trapped me here for 500 years. It was the Incandescent Sect that kept my husband and me apart. I have sworn that one day, I would see them destroyed. This day has finally come!" the Rocky laughed.


Chapter 925

Darryl took a deep breath and laughed. "Elder Rocky, I have a big vendetta against the Incandescent Sect; that is why I destroyed them."

Images of Lily flashed through Darryl's mind; his heart ached uncontrollably.

The Rocky stared at Darryl before it opened its big mouth and said gently, "You managed to block my Blood Flame with the world's top enchanted flame—the White Lily Cold Flame."

"Yes."

Ricky's red eyes were filled with admiration as he looked at Darryl. "You could control the White Lily Cold Flame at such a young age. It looks like the sky's the limit for your future." 

There were expectations in the beast's eyes. "Little brother, since you are here to seek revenge from the Incandescent Sect, then both of us have something in common. Can you do me a favor?"

Darryl nodded without any hesitation. "Of course, Elder Rocky."

Darryl knew that the Rocky's power was beyond anyone's imagination. It could be a Martial Emperor. Unfortunately, no matter how high its power, it was still trapped in the tunnel for more than 500 years.

"Darryl, don't agree to that!"

Sloan's facial expression changed; she quickly stopped him.

'There would be chaos in the world if the beast asks Darryl to free it. I am here to prevent that from happening.'

'No matter what, I will not let Darryl free it!'

"What?"

The Rocky was shocked; it looked at Sloan with curiosity.

Then, it immediately turned its head toward Darryl. "Little brother, your wife seems to have some misunderstanding about me."

What?

Wife?

Sloan blushed. "I have no relation to him. Who told you that I am his wife?"

The beast turned its head again; it seemed like it was confused. "If you are not

related to him, then why are you so intimate with him earlier? You were sticking yourself to this young man, and you squeezed into his protective shield too."

"I—" Sloan could not find the words to reply to the beast. Her beautiful face reddened.

Darryl laughed. Then, he waved his hands at the enchanted beast. "Elder Rocky, please ignore her. My wife is only throwing a tantrum. She is refusing to acknowledge me as her husband."

"I see." Rocky nodded and smiled before it looked at Darryl and said slowly, "Little Brother, are you willing to hear me out?"

"Elder, please go ahead," Darryl replied as he put his hands together.

Ricky looked ahead as if it had fallen back into its memories. Then, it said, "I have been trapped here for 500 years; that's a whole 500 years! Day and night, I have wished to leave this place. The Incandescent Sect joined hands with the other sects to ambush me and then trapped me here. They did that because I have caused a lot of trouble in society; I have done many bad things.

"However, no one knew why I did those things; the reason I killed those innocent people." Tears began to flow down its cheeks. "My family and I, even though we could live for a very long time, we have fragile reproduction abilities. You humans carry your babies for ten months, but for a beast like me, we'll have to carry our offspring for 500 years before we can birth them. I'm afraid there are only less than ten of my species left in this world."

Chapter 926

"Even though people think that my family and I are fierce beasts, we would never hurt humans.

We lived deep in the forest. One day, I accidentally ventured into the human world; I was pregnant," the Rocky said softly. It looked emotional as it said that; there were tears in its eyes. "When a Rocky is pregnant, our body becomes weak. My husband used to catch some other enchanted beasts or herbs to regulate my body. However, the New World Emperor wanted to build a new palace at that time, and he sent some humans to cut trees recklessly. A few of those hunters found my husband.

"We are part of the Four Fierce Beasts, and an adult Rocky is no less than an adult dragon!" Rocky clenched its teeth. "The humans—they want to tame us. They want us to be their enchanted beast!

"After the tree cutters left, the next day, a few human elites returned and invaded our home in the woods. They wanted to tame my husband so that they could ride him. Those elites were some of the most powerful people in the world!" The Rocky's words slowed. "But my husband would not obey them. He fought them and finally, he died with them!"

The Rocky's eyes were red; it was as if someone had poured blood into them. "My husband died, and I hated those humans intensely!

"I was angry, so I went to a human community and killed those who were in my path! Eventually, the Incandescent Sect and the New World royal family banded with hundreds of small and large sects made plans to ambush me. And I've been trapped here ever since."

The Rocky closed its eyes as it continued to say, "For the past 500 years, each new sect master from the Incandescent Sect came here to tame me so that I would be their ride. Of course, I have never obeyed them. It looks like there is justice in the world—the Incandescent Sect is finally destroyed!"

The Rocky looked at Darryl. "Five hundred years! It has been five hundred years! My life is coming to an end; I am not sure how long I have. However, there is one thing that I have not completed yet. It is about my child."

What?

Child?

Darryl was shocked when he heard that!

Bang!

At that moment, two giant eggs appeared beneath Rocky's body and floated mid-air!

Eggs?

Bang!

Darryl was stunned. He looked at the eggs; he did not blink. He swallowed his saliva as his entire body started to shake!

The two Rocky eggs were the size of a basketball; rays of lights surrounded them. It looked like the morning sun that had risen!

"Little Brother." The Rocky looked at Darryl with pleading eyes.

"For a Rocky to give birth, it is like a walk in hell. I have been trapped here for 500 years, and I have not eaten anything. I have used up all my energy to give birth to my children; I don't think I'll survive for long. Please... Can you take care of them? I know this is too shocking for you, but please promise me this. I'll even let them be your disciples; you can be their master. You and your wife can take care of each of them. Please, promise me that you'll take good care of them, and let no one bully them. I beg you, please..."

A cultivator could only have one enchanted beast in his entire life.

The Rocky knew that it did not have long to live. What would happen to its children after it had died? The younglings had only been born, so they were very fragile; they could die very easily.

Hence, the Rocky wanted to pass its children to some strong warrior before it died. Even though Darryl and his wife were not the strongest warriors it had seen, the man had the White Lily Cold Flame. He did not appear to be a simple man. If the couple were willing to take care of its younglings, it would be perfect.

"As I have said, I am not his—" Sload said softly as she bit her lips.

"This Rocky thinks that Darryl and I are married. I am don't know what to say.;

However, Sloan was interrupted.

She knew that the Rocky had gotten weaker. It was dying, and it looked like it was about to take its last breath.

Chapter 927

Darryl was stunned. His mind was in shock, and he could not gather his thoughts.

Sh*t!

The Rocky wanted them to take care of its two children?

Roar!

The Rocky released a deep, sad roar as it continued to beg Darryl. "Little Brother, please... You must take care of my children. Come here please, both of you! Let the children recognize you as their masters by dripping blood! I beg of you, please..."

The Rocky got even weaker; its voice almost broke.

Darryl's heart saddened when he saw that. He walked toward the beast with Sloan.

The Rocky was not only an enchanted beast; it was the king of enchanted beasts! It was at the same level as the Azure Dragon and the White Tiger. Those enchanted beasts would never bow to anyone easily. However, it had begged for the sake of its children. It was a heartbreaking scene!

Darryl's heart clenched; he replied respectfully, "Elder Rocky, please don't worry. We'll take good care of them."

"Good, that's good." Rocky nodded; its eyes were hopeful. "Come, let's have a dripping blood ceremony so that they would recognize you both as their masters!"

Darryl nodded as he looked at Sloan. They sliced their fingers and dripped their blood onto the Rocky eggs.

Bang!

Two rays of light immediately exploded from those two Rocky eggs; it showered the entire secret tunnel with a bright light!

They had completed the ceremony!

Darryl and Sloan were excited; each of them hugged an egg to their chest.

Sigh!

The Rocky sighed; its last wish had been fulfilled, so it had no more regrets.

"I shall leave my two children with you, Little Brother." The Rocky's voice had gotten softer; it looked at its children sadly.

Finally, the beast's large body fell heavily onto the ground. Its eyes were wholly

shut; it no longer breathed.

Darryl and Sloan had no words; they were upset beyond any description.

Sigh.

A few moments later, Sloan sighed softly. "How unexpected! A well-respected fierce beast had ignored its pride and begged; all for its children."

Darryl's heart sunk.

The next second, Darryl smiled as he looked at her. "It did not beg me; it begged both of us, as a married couple."

"Shut up," Sloan growled.

Crack!

Then, they heard the sounds of cracking shells. A hole appeared on the egg in Sloan's arms. Suddenly, a head popped out of the hole.

Dark blue fur, and black and round eyeballs—the little Rocky stretched its neck out from the inside of the egg. It looked around its surroundings.

Sloan was surprised and happy as she hugged it tightly; she was worried that she might accidentally drop the egg.

The little Rocky looked around; it was curious. Then, its eyes landed on Sloan. It looked happy as it shouted, "Mama..."

A Rocky was an intelligent enchanted beast. A newborn Rocky would already have the ability to speak.

"It is so cute." Sloan was attracted to it. She scratched its little head.

Then, the Little Rocky turned toward Darryl and shouted, "Papa..."

Darryl was so happy to hear the way the little Rocky greeted him that he wanted to laugh. He reached out to pat the little beast's head, "What a cute little fellow! Good..."

Sloan blushed again. She felt angry and awkward as she said to the little Rocky, "My dear cutie, Mama is here, but this is not your father, okay?"

"Woo..." Little Rocky roared deeply. It called out to Darryl again if it was in a protest. "Papa..."

Darryl wanted to laugh again as he looked at the little Rocky with love and patted its head. Then, he looked at the egg in his arms. "That's funny. Why is there no movement with this egg?"

Sloan was too lazy to reply to Darryl. She turned and walked toward the entrance.

Darryl took a deep breath and turned to look at the Rocky's lifeless body. "Don't worry, Elder. I will take good care of your children. I will also give you a proper burial."

Chapter 928

As he spoke, Darryl trailed behind Sloan.

Once they reached outside, they saw Yvette and the Elysium Gate disciples at the entrance. All of them looked extremely worried.

"Sister Sloan! Darryl!"

When she saw them, Yvette was delighted. She quickly went to greet them.

Then, she saw the little Rocky in Sloan's arms, and her eyes brightened. "Wow, it is so cute. What type of pet is that?"

Everyone's eyes focused on the little Rocky.

Even though it was still a youngling, it had a powerful aura.

Sloan smiled at Yvette and said, "This is a Rocky."

What?

A Rocky?

Everyone was shocked.

The Rocky was an enchanted beast from the myths.

Yvette was stunned too.

At that moment, the little Rocky looked around before it shouted at Sloan and Darryl. "Mama, Papa..."

Wow!

All the Elysium Gate disciples went into chaos.

"What's going on?"

"This Rocky can talk?"

"No, did you hear what it said? It just called Sect Master papa, and it called General Sloan mama."

Everyone discussed what had just happened; they stared at Darryl and Sloan too. All of them looked confused and conflicted.

What had happened to both of them in the secret tunnel? Why did General Sloan wear their sect master's clothes?

Sloan's face reddened when she felt everyone's eyes on her; she did not know

how to respond to them. She could not tell them that her clothes had been burned away, and she had no choice but to wear Darryl's clothes.

"Stop saying nonsense!" Sloan raised her hand to cover the little Rocky's mouth tightly.

If she let the little beast continue, her reputation would be tarnished.

"Darryl!"

Yvette walked toward Darryl and asked, "What happened with you and Sister Sloan in the tunnel?"

They had argued like cats and dogs before they went into the tunnel.

However, with the blink of an eye, a little Rocky had called them papa and mama.

It was tough for one not to overthink the situation.

Darryl smiled, but he did not answer her. He changed the subject. "Let's not talk about that first. You haven't answered me—where are Yvonne and Monica?"

Yvette bit her lips. She hesitated before she spoke softly, "Monica is doing fine, you don't have to worry about her for now. As for Yvonne—"

Yvette hesitated to continue.

Darryl's heart shivered. "What happened to Yvonne?"

Yvonne and Darryl had been through a lot.

Lily had left him forever; if anything bad had happened to Yvonne, he would not be able to take it!

Sigh!

Yvette sighed and looked at Darryl as she said, "Yvonne had been married off to Westrington."

What?

When he heard that, Darryl's body shook; he fell a few steps backward. His body felt weak; he almost dropped the Rocky egg he held in his arms.

Chapter 929

Meanwhile, at the Chancellor Residence in Dragon City, Westrington.

A year ago, the Westrington Emperor had appointed Donoghue as the Chancellor and gave him the Chancellor Residence. His position was only one below the Emperor.

The Chancellor Residence was located next to the palace. It had resting huts, trees, and artificial waterfalls, and it had an elegant environment—everywhere looked grand and powerful. Most of the time, people could only look at it from afar; no outsiders were allowed near it.

However, the Chancellor Residence was extremely merry that day.

Chancellor Donoghue and Yvonne's wedding day would take place the next day, and it would be held at the Chancellor Residence.

Donoghue was the Westrington Emperor's favorite person, and he was also the chancellor; he had a high authority. Besides that, the wedding was the communion of the two continents, and so, it was exceptionally grand.

All of Westrington's ministers and sects attended the wedding.

The Dragon City's inhabitants were also gathered at the Chancellor Residence!

They were there because they heard that the bride, Princess Yvonne, was as beautiful as a goddess. They wanted to see what she looked like.

Yvonne had to endure a long journey before she arrived at Westrington. She was almost at the Chancellor Residence; the wedding would commence upon her arrival.

Lanterns and decorations adorned the Chancellor Residence. Everyone was there; it was very merry.

Donoghue was dressed in a bright-red groom attire, and he waited in the side hall. He looked extremely smart.

Unfortunately...

Even though the atmosphere outside was merry and joyous, Donoghue was cold. He had not met Princess Yvonne. He only heard that she was as beautiful as a goddess from heaven.

Still, Donoghue could only think about Darry.

He heard that Darryl had fallen into a volcano crater about a year ago. However, he did not die, and he had been upgraded to a Martial Emperor as well!

Donoghue also heard about the news of how Darryl and his two brothers had destroyed the Incandescent Sect.

"Darryl!"

Donoghue slammed his fists on the table; his eyes showed the vengeance that he had in his mind. "Do you think that you are so great now that you've destroyed the Incandescent Sect? I will come for you after my wedding. I want you to repay your debt to me a hundred times over!"

Bang!

Donoghue's punch broke the solid wood table into smaller pieces—debris covered the floor!

"Sir!" A servant ran to him with excitement. "Sir, all the guests are here! The Princess and her entourage had just entered Dragon City, and they should arrive at the Chancellor Residence very soon. You should go out to meet her now."

"Very well," Donoghue replied before he walked out of the side hall.

Once he appeared, all the guests started to walk toward him.

"Mister Dixon, congratulations..."

"Mister Dixon, I heard that Princess Yvonne is magnificent!"

Laughter and praises rained upon Donoghue as he mustered a smile and replied to them.

"Announcing the arrival of Princess Yvonne!"

A voice shouted from outside the door.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Fireworks and firecrackers echoed throughout the entire Chancellor Residence.

The Princess' entourage from the New World looked impressive and grand; it included hundreds of thousands of soldiers and servants. A beautiful palanquin covered in fresh flowers was in the middle of the entourage; Princess Yvonne was in it.

"We're inviting Princess Yvonne to please step out of the palanquin!"

A servant's voice shouted. As he spoke, the palanquin descended to the ground slowly. Moments later, an attractive body stepped out of the palanquin.

It was Yvonne.

Wow!

Chapter 930

Everyone's eyes were focused on Yvonne.

She wore a long red dress that covered her entire body, and she had a lot of jewelry on her too. She looked as elegant as the royal family; she had a perfectly sexy body and an exquisite face. She really did look like a goddess from heaven!

Beautiful! So beautiful!

Clap! Clap! Clap!

Everyone admired the Princess, and the male guests were excited too; they clapped and shouted when they saw her.

However, no one noticed the bitter expression on Yvonne's face; she did not look happy at all.

When she knew she was chosen to be a princess to be married off to Westrington, Yvonne had tried her best to refuse it.

However, she was only a weak woman; she could not fight the order.

Yvonne's heart felt like it was dead during her entire journey to Westrington.

Finally, the servants ushered Yvonne toward Donoghue.

As witnessed by everyone, Donoghue took a look at Yvonne, and he was stunned!

"The young miss from the Young family in Donghai City?" Donoghue was shocked! He had never dreamt that Princess Yvonne was the Young family's young miss.

Yvonne was a young miss from a family in the antique trade. Her family was one of the wealthiest families in Donghai City; they were rather famous.

Donoghue was also a young master from a wealthy family, so of course, he was familiar with Yvonne.

What?

'The Chancellor knows me?'

Yvonne had kept her head low, but she immediately looked at Donoghue when she heard that. She asked curiously, "Do you know me?"

Yvonne's heart started to beat faster.

'He knew about my family, so he must be from the World Universe.' Yvonne no longer felt disappointed. 'Perhaps he could bring me home to the World Universe

one day.' Yvonne felt happy as she thought about that. She looked excitedly at Donoghue.

Donoghue's eyes were red as he stared intensely at Yvonne. He squeezed the next few words from his clenched teeth. "Of course, I know you. You're Yvonne Young, the Young family's young miss. Not only do I know you, but I also know about your relationship with Darryl. Weird, isn't it?"

Darryl had crashed Yvonne's wedding to Jeremy; everyone had heard about that.

Yvonne was delighted when she heard that. "You know Darryl?"

'That's great. If this Chancellor is Darryl's friend, he will not treat me too badly.'

As she thought of Darryl, Yvonne's heart started to ache. She had lived in the palace for very long; she did not know if Darryl was dead or alive. She only knew that Darryl had fallen to his apparent death in the volcano crater.

Donoghue laughed loudly. His eyes were red as he nodded at Yvonne and said, "I know him! Of course, I know him! I would recognize him even if he turned into ashes!"

Donoghue clenched his teeth as he stated the last sentence.

"You—"

Yvonne's body shook; she could sense that something was not right. She wanted to say something, but she did not know what to say to the man.

At that moment, everyone looked at one another; all of them were curious.

What was that about?

It seemed like the Chancellor knew Princess Yvonne.

They seemed to have a complicated relationship.

Donoghue held his fist tightly as he walked forward. "Well, Yvonne, God sent you to me, so this must be our fate. It is definitely our fate."

Donoghue's face looked horrible as he said that. He smiled coldly at Yvonne and said, "Don't worry, I will treat you well. After I am done playing with you, I will send your dead body back to Darryl."

Chapter 931

Yvonne put her hand on her cheeks after Donoghue slapped her. She felt hurt and angry, and she was about to cry. "How dare you touch me! Darryl will never forgive you. He—"

Slap!

Donoghue slapped her again!

"Don't mention his name!" Donoghue lifted his hand; his eyes were red. Then, he ordered the servants. "Lock her up for now. I'll torture her thoroughly tonight. Once I am done with her, I will send her back to Darryl!"

"Yes!"

The servants immediately answered him before they walked toward Yvonne.

Yvonne's body trembled; her face was pale as she stared at Donoghue. "You are not human; you are a monster!"

She thought things would turn out better for her if she met someone from the World Universe; she did not expect to encounter an evil monster!

"Chancellor!"

A minister stood up, bowed to Donoghue and said, "Chancellor, please think wisely. This lady is the New World's princess. If you torture and kill her, I am afraid it would affect the relationship between our two continents."

Some of the crowd nodded in agreement.

Donoghue's eyes shone scarily as he looked coldly at the minister. "Do you want to die? Do I need you to interfere with what I want to do?"

Bang!

A strong aura exploded from Donoghue's body and surrounded the entire area!

Bang!

The minister's body shook when he felt Donoghue's strong aura; he knelt on the ground. He continued to tremble as he said, "Chancellor, please don't be angry. I would never do that."

The guests were frightened as well; no one dared to say anything.

Donoghue was the chancellor; he only needed to answer to one person!

All the guests were mainly elite and influential people, but they were nothing

when compared to Donoghue!

Donoghue was furious; none of them dared to open their mouth and speak simply.

The entire wedding venue was deadly silent.

Suddenly, a lady stood up. Her body was slim, and she was in a dark green long dress. She had exquisite facial features, and she wore thick makeup; she looked beautiful.

"Why are you so angry, Chancellor?" the lady asked calmly. She was the Five Poison Sect's Sect Master, Lindsay Jones!

Lindsay was 30 years old; she maintained her figure well, and she was attractive.

She was also famous in Westrington! She was the Five Poison Sect's Sect Master!

The Five Poison Sect specialized in poison. All of their disciples were knowledgeable in the art of poison; they could kill someone without a single trace!

Everyone knew Lindsay as the Snake Scorpion Queen.

Who would not fear a woman like that? At Westrington, no matter how powerful the person was, one would not offend Lindsay.

Donoghue looked at Lindsay and smiled. "Sect Master Jones, you have something to say?"

Ever since the Westrington Emperor conquered Westrington, the Five Poison Sect had surrendered to the Emperor.

Chapter 932

Donoghue had stayed there for more than a year; he and Lindsay were old acquaintances.

Lindsay smiled and said, "Chancellor, Princess Yvonne is still a princess from the New World even though she was only awarded the title recently. If you do not treat her well, is that not an insult to them? You want to kill that man, Darryl, right? I can help you with that, and it won't jeopardize our relationship with the New World."

"Tell me!" Donoghue's face shone.

Lindsay approached him and said softly, "I have just learned the Mind Control Charm, and I can use that to make the Princess obey my orders. No matter the distance, she will do as I ask." Her voice was very soft; only Donoghue could hear her.

Lindsay continued to speak. "Send her to me, and let me set the charm on her. You'll get to enjoy her company for a while before you send her back to Darryl. Even though I'll be thousands of miles away, I can still make her kill Darryl. She will follow my order."

Lindsay smiled; she looked alluring and attractive.

As for those who did not know her, they would definitely be attracted to her. However, those who did know that her smile was dangerous.

"Great! That's great!"

Donoghue was delighted. He could not hide the excitement in his heart. "This is a good idea; let's do it your way."

Donoghue was worried. Even if he had violated Yvonne, that would only devastate Darryl; it would not kill him. Darryl had strong power; even with the Sky Breaking Axe, Donoghue might not be able to defeat him.

'With Lindsay's Mind Control Charm on Yvonne, Darryl would definitely die! He would never expect the woman he loved so deeply to kill him!'

As he thought about that, Donoghue was happy beyond description.

Lindsay's face showed a slight smile; she walked straight toward Yvonne.

"You—"

At that moment, Yvonne felt unusually fearful. She looked at Lindsay and said, "What do you want with me?"

Yvonne did not hear Donoghue and Lindsay's conversation, but she knew they had discussed an attack on Darryl.

'I will not let them get their way; even if I have to die.'

Bang!

Suddenly, Lindsay lifted her gentle hands and punched Yvonne's body.

Yvonne did not have the chance to react; her vision turned black, and she immediately fainted.

"Chancellor, I shall set the Mind Control Charm on her tonight. I will send her back to you early tomorrow morning." Lindsay smiled widely; she looked very confident.

Donoghue smiled as he nodded.

At the same time, Donoghue focused his attention on Yvonne. Apart from his vengeance against Darryl, he was also jealous of the man.

Darryl had been fortunate in love.

Each of his women was more beautiful than the other.

His wife, Lily, was the famous Donghai City goddess.

Yvonne was nothing less than that too.

"After you've set the Mind Control Charm on Yvonne tonight, send her back to me immediately after that." Donoghue smiled coldly. "I want to enjoy her before I send her back to Darryl."

"Don't worry, Chancellor." Lindsay smiled and said, "With the Mind Control Charm, Miss Young would obey me unconditionally. I shall let her serve you, Chancellor, properly."

"Good, good!" Donoghue laughed briefly as he nodded and then waved his hands at his guests. "Alright everyone, everything is fine now. Enjoy yourselves tonight! Let's have a drink!"

All of his guests immediately replied politely.

At the same time, Lindsay ordered two disciples to carry Yvonne away.

Chapter 933

Donoghue and his guests continued to drink as a man walked through the door.

"Chancellor."

The person wore formal minister clothing; he was the royal guards' General, Simon Clive.

Simon Clive was a Level Two Master Emperor. As the General, he was in charge of the palace security, and he was also someone the Westrington Emperor admired.

Once he was there, Simon said to Donoghue respectfully, "Congratulations Chancellor! Congratulations on your marriage."

Donoghue smiled. "General Clive, please enjoy the drinks."

"Chancellor, other than offering my congratulations on your marriage, I am here to discuss another matter." Simon smiled before he continued to say seriously, "His Majesty has ordered you to destroy the Thousands Wonder Sect once your wedding ceremony has ended."

Destroy a sect?

Donoghue was stunned; he furrowed his brows.

Since the Westrington Emperor had conquered the entire Westrington, he had ordered all the sects in the continent to surrender to the royalty unconditionally.

The Five Poison Sect and a few other sects had eagerly co-operated with that order.

However, a few others remained stubborn; the Thousands Wonder Sect was one of them. That was why the Westrington Emperor wanted Donoghue to lead the army to destroy them the next morning.

Donoghue nodded and replied with a deep voice, "Very well, I got it."

Donoghue was upset.

Sh*t!

He had planned to enjoy Yvonne's beauty the next morning when Lindsay sent the woman back to him.

However, the Emperor had ordered him to destroy the sect; what a bummer!

Donoghue was in a terrible mood; he did not know what to say. It was not like he could disobey the Emperor's order.

"Pass a message for Lindsay. Once she is done with the Princess, she doesn't have to send her back to me. Just send her to Darryl." Donoghue's face darkened as he passed his order to his followers.

He did not need to rush to enjoy Yvonne. She could kill Darryl first, and then she would be back to Donoghue's side. He could enjoy his beauty then.

"Yes, Chancellor." The follower replied and left quickly.

Sigh! Donoghue took a deep breath as he looked at the sky above; his eyes were full of vengeance.

'Darryl, you should be satisfied to die in the hands of the woman you love.'

Meanwhile, in a small city, a few miles away from the Incandescent Sect's main altar at the New World.

It was not a huge city. Still, it had various shops and restaurants; everything was available.

In a room at an inn, Lanvin was furious as she sat at the side. A man stood beside her.

The man looked to be around 20 years old, and he was dressed in a long black robe. He had big eyes with thick brows; he looked smart. He was Yoel Walford, a disciple from the Spiritual Invisible Sect. He was very powerful, and he had assassination experiences; he was one of the sect's top elite disciples.

The world was still in shock when Darryl and his brothers destroyed the Incandescent Sect! The Spiritual Invisible Sect had sent Darren and other top assassins to support Lanvin.

Earlier the facet that Darryl and his brothers destroyed Incandescent Sect had shocked the world! So, the Spiritual Invisible Sect had sent Yoel and other top assassins to support Lanvin.

"Senior Sister."

Yoel smiled at Lanvin as he tried to console her. "Don't worry; it is only Darryl. Even though he was powerful enough to destroy the Incandescent Sect, he would not be able to defend himself against the Spiritual Invisible Sect's assassination attempt."

Chapter 934

As he spoke, Yoel looked at Lanvin with admiration.

Yoel had liked Lanvin for more than three years. When he first joined the Spiritual Invisible Sect three years ago, he was attracted to Lanvin at first sight.

In Yoel's heart, Lanvin was not only beautiful; she was charming and attractive as well. Sometime, he would even dream of her!

Sigh!

Lanvin sighed and said impatiently, "If it were so easy to kill Darryl, I would not have asked for support from the headquarters."

Then, Lily walked toward them with a teapot.

Lanvin stared at Lily; she had found an outlet to release some stress. "Hey Ugly, I only asked you to make tea, but you are so slow. So slow! I don't even know what else you can do."

Since Yoel's arrival, Lanvin had treated Lily like a servant and ordered her around.

Lanvin thought that Lily was useless and ugly; it was a burden to bring her along on the mission.

It looked like she was only there to serve tea and water.

Despite that, Lanvin was still not satisfied when she looked at Lily. She would always pick on her weaknesses.

Lily did not speak; she poured the tea silently. She was very nervous, and she accidentally splashed some tea.

"Get lost, Ugly!"

Yoel waved his hand disgustedly; he did not even look at Lily. "Careless and useless—you can't even pour the tea properly. Leave now; don't disturb my conversation with my Senior Sister."

A lover would always agree with his lover's choice.

Yoel knew that Lanvin was annoyed with Lily, and so he did not like Lily as well.

Lily replied briefly and quickly left the room.

As she just stepped out of the room, Lanvin said, "It is so frustrating to see that ugly woman! The reason our mission did not run smoothly was probably because of the bad luck she has brought upon us. Why did Sect Master accept her as a disciple? What good is she? And Sect Master has even passed so many skills

and knowledge to that ugly woman too!"

Yoel quickly nodded in agreement. "That's right. Since you are frustrated whenever you see her, why don't we dump that ugly woman?"

'Dump her?'

Lanvin furrowed her brows. "How do we do that?"

Yoel smiled and lowered his voice when he said, "There is a huge mountain a few dozen miles from here—the Incandescent Sect's Black Wind Mountain. A group of bandits had conquered the mountain, and they had formed the Black Wind Sect. Their sect leaders are brothers, and they are all evil men. They've committed all sorts of crimes. No one would dare to go up the mountain or enter the sect's territory."

Yoel's eyes showed sinister intentions as he said, "We'll lure that ugly woman to somewhere near the Black Wind Sect. She's so useless; she won't be able to return safely once she's there. When we are back at the Spiritual Invisible Sect, we shall inform the Master that the woman did not follow our instruction and went on the mission by herself. Master could not blame us for that."

Lanvin was delighted. She nodded at Yoel and complimented him. "Good job, Yoel, for thinking of such a plan."

Lanvin was extremely thrilled.

At last, she could get rid of that burden completely.

When he heard the compliments, Yoel smiled widely. Hee tried to impress her again. "It is my honor to ease your frustration, Senior Sister."

Lanvin did not want to speak more nonsense. She waved her hands to signal Yoel not to talk further about it.

Then, Lanvin shouted at the door, "Hey Ugly, come in here!"

Lily could only think about Darryl. When she heard that he had destroyed the Incandescent Sect, she felt so touched. She knew that he had done it for her.

Ever since Incandescent Sect's destruction, Lily had not had news about Darryl. The Elysium Gate disciples had sealed off the area around Mount Mingwang. No one could go up the mountain. That was why Lily trailed after Lanvin in that small city—she wanted to wait for Darryl to make his descent from the mountain.

Chapter 935

"Hey, Ugly."

Lanvin looked at Lily and said coldly, "There's a mountain about 40 miles north. It is called the Black Wind Mountain. You can go there to look for news about Darryl."

The mountain to the north?

Lily was stunned; she did not understand it. "Senior Sister, isn't Darryl at the Incandescent Sect main altar on Mount Mingwang?"

Bang!

Lanvin looked furious. She slammed her hand on the table and scolded, "Why do you have so many questions? I just received news about that. Don't want to go? Then, go back to the sect immediately. Don't ever hope that I'd bring you along on any other future mission."

Yoel also looked arrogant as he said, "So much nonsense. You only need to execute the order. You cannot and should not ask about it, understand?"

"Very well, I understand."

Lily sighed discreetly. Then, she turned and left the room and headed toward the direction of the Black Wind Sect.

...

Meanwhile, on Mount Mingwang.

The Elysium Gate had conquered the mountain.

Occasionally, laughter echoed from a beautiful bedroom behind the Grand Brightness Main Hall.

Debra held a furry purple pet as she sat on the bed. The pet had a lion's head, and it looked adorable.

Jewel sat at the side; she was excited when she played with that pet.

It was Darryl's little Rocky!

Darryl's little Rocky had hatched after Sloan and Yvette had left the previous day.

The little Rocky did not look the same as its mother. It was purple, and its body had flashes of electricity that generated some sizzling sounds. However, the little Rocky was still small, so the current was not strong.

"He is so adorable."

Jewel clapped her hands; her eyes looked like the crescent moon when she smiled.

The little Rocky's eyes were black and round. From its enchanted sense, it called out to Debra adorably. "Mama, Mama..."

Debra blushed.

Jewel clapped and laughed as she said, "Sister Debra, it is calling you Mama."

The little Rocky turned its head and shouted at Jewel, "Mama..."

"You—"

Jewel had a weird expression on her face as she pursed her lips and said, "Why do you call me Mama too?"

Darryl laughed. The little fellow would call all beautiful ladies as its mother.

However, there was bitterness in his laughter.

Yvette told him that Yvonne had gone to Westrington to get married to Donoghue! He was upset and felt extremely terrible.

Darryl felt as if he had gone mad; he wanted to head to Westrington immediately. However, he knew that he should not rush things. He needed to discuss it with Chester and Dax when they returned.

His brothers had gone after Matteo after they had destroyed the Incandescent Sect the other day. They had not returned yet.

Darryl thought about Yvonne; every minute he spent in waiting was like torture. He could not wait anymore.

Suddenly, they heard footsteps.

An Elysium Gate disciple stood outside the door obediently and said softly, "Brother Darryl, two ambassadors from Westrington—a man and a lady—are here. They wanted to see you regarding some matters."

'Ambassadors from Westrington? Donoghue's people?'

Chapter 936

Darryl gathered his thoughts before he said, "Let them in."

The disciple nodded.

Soon, he brought two people into the hall.

When Darryl saw the woman, his body shook, and his mind blanked. He was stunned.

The woman wore a long black dress that showed off her perfect bodyline. She had exquisite facial features too. She looked attractive and elegant; she looked beautiful beyond description!

Darryl had dreamt of that woman countless times!

He missed her madly!

Yvonne!

"Yvonne? Is that you?" Darryl came back to his senses; he rushed toward her and hugged Yvonne tightly in his arms. His tears flowed continuously!

Darryl was so emotional that his body trembled!

The person he missed had appeared right in front of his eyes!

It was just like a dream.

Jewel and Debra were stunned too.

"Darryl..."

Yvonne smiled and whispered as she hugged Darryl.

They had been separated for more than a year before they met again that day. However, Yvonne did not seem excited. She was already under the Mind Control Charm; she was not conscious at all.

Darryl held Yvonne's face between his palms; he knew that she was not well. She also looked slimmer than he had ever seen her.

She must have suffered terribly for the past year.

Darryl's heart ached when he thought about that. He looked at Yvonne; his voice was full of regret and sorrow when he said, "Yvonne, I'm so sorry! I've let you suffer so..."

Darryl hugged Yvonne tightly again as if the person he loved would disappear

once he released his hands.

Yvonne smiled lightly, but she did not speak.

'Oh, yes!'

Darryl gathered his thoughts again before he looked at the man who was there with Yvonne. "Who are you? Why are you with Yvonne?"

The man looked as if he was in his thirties; he was dressed in a long black robe. He should be a Level Five Martial Saint, and he looked friendly.

The man took a step forward. He was Donoghue's disciple, but he started to speak some nonsense. "Sect Master Darby, I am a disciple from the Thousands Wonder Sect. Two days ago, I attended Princess Yvonne's wedding. I realized that she did not wish to marry Donoghue; there is only enough space for you in her heart. So, I rescued her and accompanied her here so that you can meet each other again."

Darryl was delighted; he looked at Yvonne for affirmation. "Yvonne, is that true?"

"Yes!"

Yvonne nodded. "That is right..."

When he heard that, Darryl had no more doubts. He smiled at the man and said, "Brother, I will never forget this favor."

The person smiled slightly. "You are welcome, Sect Master. We are all from the same community, so we should always help each other. Now that I have brought her here, I shall take my leave. I still have other urgent matters to attend to."

Before Darryl could reply to him, the man turned and left. He had disappeared in the blink of an eye.

"Why did he leave in such a hurry?" Darryl mumbled to himself.

"Mister!"

Jewel walked toward him and smiled at Yvonne. She said, "Is this Sister Yvonne whom you've mentioned previously? She is beautiful and elegant."

Darryl had already treated Jewel as part of his family.

So, Jewel knew a lot about Darryl's situation. She also knew Yvonne and Darryl's relationship.

Yvonne nodded with a smile.

Chapter 937

However, Debra stood at the side and stared at Yvonne. She appeared to be in deep thoughts.

She could see that Darryl's love for Yvonne ran deep, but she felt as if something was not right with the woman.

Logically, when two people reunited after a long separation, they should be elated. However, Yvonne acted aloof.

Darryl was too happy to see Yvonne again, so he did not notice that something was not right with her.

Debra was the Artemis Sect's Sect Master, so she had more experiences. Her instinct told her that there was something wrong with Yvonne.

"Tell me, Yvonne, how have you been for the past year?" Darryl asked gently as he held Yvonne's hand.

He had so much to tell her as he had not seen her for more than a year. Perhaps he would not be finished even after three days and three nights!

Jewel served them tea obediently.

"For the past one year, I—" Yvonne smiled briefly, "I was trapped at the New World Palace. Then, I was married off to the Westrington continent, and now, I'm with you. That's all to it. What about you? What happened to you the past year?"

"Well, for one, I've missed you every single day." Darryl drank some tea to soothe his throat. Then, he started to tell her about his experiences for the past year.

Yvonne sat there silently; there was no emotion on her face. There were some occasional smiles, but they looked fake.

However, Daryl did not notice that at all; he was too happy to meet her again. He held Yvonne's hand tightly as he continued to talk.

...

Meanwhile...

As per Lanvin and Yoel's discussion when they walked about leaving Lily behind, they told her to head to the Black Wind Sect to get some news about Darryl.

At that moment, Lily was almost at the Black Wind Sect.

The Black Wind Sect's Sect Master was Taurus Stout, and he had more than a hundred disciples—all of them were powerful cultivators.

Taurus was a butcher. It was rumored that he had found the Thousands Spiritual Scripture in a pig's stomach when he slaughtered it. He cultivated the technique, and his ability accelerated tremendously. His intentions turned evil after he became a cultivator, and soon, he started to rob other people. Then, he became infamous in the community. He recruited more than a hundred disciples, conquered the mountain and set up the Black Wind Sect.

Black Wind Sect nothing but evil deeds! Their disciples would go around places to rob houses and people on the road. The people who lived near them and the merchants who passed them by suffered terribly.

There was a forest area a few hundred miles away from the Black Wind Sect, and at that time, Lily was in that woods.

When Lily realized that she had reached the Black Wind Sect, she sweated profusely—she was worried.

'Sister Lanvin told me to come to this place to get news about Darryl. But this is just an uninhabited forest; why would he be here?'

Just as Lily wondered about that, she heard some footsteps. Then, a dozen strong men appeared in the forest. They held a long blade in their hands, and they were dressed like robbers.

The leader was a chubby man, and he had a moustache that covered his face. He was the Black Wind Sect's Sect Master—Taurus!

A Level Five Martial Saint!

"Who are you? How dare you trespass the Black Wind Sect!" Taurus spoke coldly as he walked forward with a long blade in his hand. He even checked out Lily.

'She has a perfect body!'

Lily wore a mask, but one's heart would itch when they saw her beautiful body.

Lily's heart clenched; those people looked like they were up to no good. She tried to calm down as she said, "I'm just passing by."

"Passing by?"

Taurus laughed coldly. "Of all the roads in the world, why must you pass by the Black Wind Sect? Everyone in the New World knows not to do that!"

A young disciple behind him smiled cheekily and said, "Sect Master, this woman's body is just perfect; her looks should not be that bad too. We should kidnap her to be our Sect Mistress."

"Yes, yes! Be our Sect Mistress."

Chapter 938

The other robbers started to cheer too.

Taurus smiled evilly as he waved his hand. "Brothers, tie her up!"

Wow!

Taurus's disciples immediately charged forward and surrounded Lily.

"You—"

Lily bit her lips; she felt embarrassed and angry.

Taurus smiled evilly at Lily and said, "I fancy you; it is your honor to be my Sect Mistress. I suggest you don't struggle." Then, he laughed.

Lily's body trembled as she held her long sword tightly and charged forward.

She had gone through so many things, and she had also cultivated at the Spiritual Invisible Sect for a year; Lily was a much braver person then. She was no longer a fearful little girl.

She only wanted to escape that place with her own ability.

However, how could she do that. It had only been less than a minute, but her body was already exhausted.

Bang!

Taurus appeared from the back. As fast as lightning, he extended his hand to seal Lily's pressure point.

Lily immediately let go of her long sword as her body froze; she could not move!

Taurus laughed.

Then, he smiled as he looked at Lily. "I told you—don't bother struggling.

Just be my Sect Mistress obediently."

Taurus lifted his hand and tore Lily's face mask.

Gasp!

When those robbers saw Lily's face, all of them gasped in surprise. Then, they sighed as they shook their head.

"Oh, my! She is so ugly."

"Such a perfect body; what a waste!"

"Sh*t, she scared me! So ugly!"

There was a commotion, and Taurus looked surprised. He bit his mouth and spat on the floor. "Sh*t! I have been in the society for so many years, and I have seen countless women, but I have never seen someone so ugly before! Why bother staying alive when you look like that?"

"You—" Lily felt a pinch on her nose as tears pooled in her eyes.

She wanted to cry as realization dawned upon her—Darryl was not there.

Lanvin must have known that. She must have told Lily to go to the Black Wind Sect with hopes that she would not be able to return!

Lily's heart trembled. She never thought that her senior sister would be so cruel to want her dead.

Taurus was furious as he looked at Lily. "We are men with principals—we would never release our captives. It's your bad luck."

The man looked at Lily's body as he thought about how wasteful that was.

Sh*t!

'I thought I had managed to capture someone with such a perfect body, and that I would have a beautiful Sect Mistress. How did she turn out to be so ugly?'

What?

Lily was distraught. "Please, you must release me. I only trespassed by accident—"

'I can't be trapped here; I still need to go back to look for Darryl.'

'Most importantly, Senior Sister is still planning to assassinate Darryl. I must try my best to find ways to stop them.'

Chapter 939

Taurus was too lazy to say anything else. He waved his hands. "Send her to the sect and lock her in the rock cave. Let her rot and die there."

Taurus was not willing to look at that ugly woman one more time. The rock cave he mentioned was only an ordinary cave—it was wet and damp.

Once Taurus had given his orders, the robbers captured Lily.

Lily was furious and distraught; she wanted to struggle, but her acupoint had been sealed. She had been tied up tightly, so she could not move.

Once they were back at their sect, a few robbers took Lily and walked toward the cave.

Lily saw that it was a creepy cave—it was dark and damp. There was a rock door in front of the cave, and it was opened.

"Get in!"

The two robbers pushed Lily inside and closed the rock door.

The cold breeze hit her face as her body shivered. The surrounding area was pitch black.

A woman trapped in such a place; everyone would get angry with that situation. Lily tried to calm down as she looked around her.

It was a vast cave—as big as half a football field. She could also see many bones in the corner. Those were probably the remains of those the Black Wind Sect had previously abducted.

Lily trembled when she saw those bones.

"What should I do? Am I going to die here?"

As she thought about that, Lily quickly explored the cave for an exit.

Crack!

Something cracked under her feet—she must have touched something. Her body shivered when she took a closer look.

She saw something that resembled a jade. However, it was not; that thing was crystal clear. It shone brightly in that dark cave.

Lily picked up the rock and looked at it curiously.

If those goddesses from the Fuyao Palace were there, they would have

screamed.

It seemed like it was the Heaven Repairing Stone?

...

Meanwhile, at the Incandescent Sect's main altar on Mount Mingwang.

It was midnight, and there was only dead silence everywhere. The moon was high in the sky as the stars shone brightly.

A slim figure stood quietly at the Grand Brightness Main Hall's door. Showered with the rays of the moonlight, she looked like a goddess from the moon palace.

That woman was Yvonne.

Darryl had talked to her during the day, and the man had only gone to rest.

Yvonne stood there with no emotions on her face. She held a crystal ball in her hand.

There was an image of a person in the crystal ball—it was Lindsay, the Five Poisons Sect's Sect Master.

The Five Poisons Sect had a dark charm—it could display one's figure on the crystal ball even though they were thousands of miles away. It was the same charm that Lindsay had used.

Lindsay smiled. "Yvonne, Chancellor Dixon said that you must let Darryl suffer before you kill him.

"Kill everyone close to Darryl first. Let him witness the death of all his loved ones one by one—let him suffer."

"Yes."

Yvonne nodded. Her face was icy; there was not a single emotion on it.

"Remember—the chancellor hates Darryl deeply. His family, and the women he loves, none of them should be spared!" Lindsay said coldly as she appeared on the crystal ball.

Yvonne was about to reply when an excited voice interrupted her.

Chapter 940

"Sister Yvonne, are you enjoying the moon?"

Yvonne turned and saw a curious Jewel behind her.

"It is so late now. Why are you not sleeping?" Jewel jogged toward her as she spoke. Her face was full of curiosity as she smiled and said, "Can't sleep because you have only reunited with Mister?"

It was late. Jewel had wanted to sleep, but she felt hungry once she laid on the bed. She was on her way to find some food in the kitchen when she saw Yvonne.

Jewel thought she saw Yvonne talked to herself, so she went to greet her.

Yvonne did not speak; her eyes were locked tightly on Jewel. She walked toward the younger woman—her face looked so cold, and her entire body had a murderous aura!

"Sister Yvonne, what happened? Are you alright?" Jewel did not understand it, so she smiled and said, "It is so late now. Are you hungry like me? I can take you to eat some good food!"

Jewel smiled and reached out to hold Yvonne's hand.

Suddenly, a long sword appeared in Yvonne's hand.

"Die."

A cold voice echoed from Yvonne's mouth as she extended her hand at lightning speed. The tip of her sword shone coldly as she pierced Jewel's chest!

"Sister Yvonne, you—" Jewel's body quivered; she had not expected that! She never thought that Yvonne would want to kill her!

Bang!

The sword struck Jewel's body. However, it did not stab through her. There was only a noise, but nothing else happened.

What?

Yvonne furrowed her brows; there were doubts in her cold emotion.

Even though the blade did not injure Jewel, the strong impact sent her a few steps backward. She dropped onto the ground.

Jewel felt a tightness in her chest; she could barely breathe.

Darryl had put the Celestial Silkworm Armor on her just two days ago. Since no

ordinary folks could injure Darryl, he thought that Jewel would need the armor more than him. Jewel had worn the armor on her body for the past two days.

It was fortunate that Jewel had the Celestial Silkworm Armor; otherwise, she would have died from that stab wound.

Even though her life was spared, Jewel was in shock. Her voice shook as she said, "Sister Yvonne, why did you—"

Bang!

Before she could finish her question, Yvonne stretched her hand and punched Jewel.

Yvonne was not a strong woman. She had studied at the Hexad School, but she was barely a cultivator. Her strength had improved when she was with Yvette, but she was only a Level Three Master.

However, Jewel was only an ordinary person.

How could she stand that punch?!

Bang!

Yvette struck Jewel's chest again before they heard a loud bang. Jewel had no way to avoid the attack; her body flew backward as she spouted a mouthful of blood. She landed on the floor with her eyes closed—no one knew if she was alive!

Yvonne's face was emotionless as she walked toward Jewel slowly with her sword. She was about to stab the younger woman again.

Finally, the sound of light footsteps echoed from behind her.

She saw a woman flew toward them from somewhere nearby. It was Debra!

Debra was about to sleep when she heard the noises of a fight. So, she went to check it out. Then, she saw Yvonne's back as the woman left hurriedly.

"Who are you? How dare you hurt Jewel? Stand right there!" Debra shouted; she was about to go after Yvonne.

Just as she took two steps, she saw Jewel was on the ground. There was blood around her lips. Debra's body shivered.

"Jewel!"

Debra rushed toward her quickly; she felt angry, and her heart ached. She did not bother to go after Yvonne—she carried Jewel with her quickly.

Chapter 941

After they had spent a year together, Debra loved Jewel like her own sister.

Her heart shattered when she saw Jewel injured on the ground.

Debra checked Jewel's breath; she was relieved when she realized that Jewel was still alive.

"What happened?"

Right at that moment, Darryl appeared and walked toward them speedily. He could not help but ask about the situation.

Darryl was shocked when he saw Jewel; he was stunned, and his brain spun.

"Jewel!" Darryl shouted like a crazy man; he immediately took her in his arms!

Jewel's face was pale, and her body was soft and weak. It seemed like she was in a coma—she could not hear Darryl at all.

At that moment, many Elysium Gate disciples rushed toward them. All of them were stunned when they saw what had happened.

"Jewel, don't scare me! You will be fine; you must be fine!" Darryl roared wildly. He was utterly devastated; his heart ached terribly.

Then, Darryl looked around before he gazed at Debra and asked, "What happened? How did this happen?"

Darryl's voice trembled.

Jewel was a kind-hearted person, and she had never quarreled with anyone. Who would be so cruel to hurt such a kind woman?

Debra bit her lips and said softly, "When I reached here, Jewel was already in this condition."

When he heard that, Darryl's eyes were bloody-red. He screamed, "Did you see who did it?"

"I—"

Debra wanted to speak, but she stopped herself. Finally, she said, "It looked like Yvonne."

Debra had only seen that person's back, but she knew it was Yvonne.

What?

Darryl was stunned. He thought he had misheard her. "What did you say?"

"The woman that you were with today—Yvonne." Debra did not hesitate to answer him.

Debra had wanted to warn Darryl when she felt there was something wrong with Yvonne. She did not do that because she worried that he might think that she was jealous.

However, Jewel had been seriously injured—they did not know if she would survive the attack. Debra's heart ached for the younger woman, so she did not want to worry about her hesitation anymore.

Darryl was stunned for a few moments before he shook his head. "No. It could not have been Yvonne!"

Yvonne was such a kind person; how could she be the killer?

Besides, Yvonne had nothing against Jewel, how could she injure her?

Sigh!

Debra sighed lightly before she spoke seriously, "Darryl, I am confident that it was her. Didn't you notice that there was something wrong with her? She finally saw you after a year, but she did not display any excitement and happiness. She was very cold with you."

Darryl shook his head firmly. "Don't say it anymore. It could not have been Yvonne. She is not that kind of person."

Darryl did notice something different about Yvonne during the day.

However, he did not think further about that.

They had been separated for a year; Yvonne must have gone through some terrible ordeals. It was probably why she acted that way.

Darryl would never believe that Yvonne would attack Jewel.

He hugged Jewel tightly and stood up; he ordered his disciples, "Search Mount Mingwang immediately; locate anyone who looks suspicious."

"Yes!"

The disciples obeyed and dispersed to investigate.

Darryl looked at Debra and said, "Stay off this matter. It is not possible; Yvonne would never attack Jewel. Don't simply accuse her. I will find the killer."

Then, Darryl carried Jewel into a room at the back. She was seriously injured; he needed to heal her with his internal energy.

He could not waste a single minute more.

"Darryl!" Debra stomped her feet worriedly; she was furious. When Darryl left, she mumbled, "Why don't you believe me?"

Debra's heart felt terrible.

Darryl thought she had intentionally ruined his relationship with Yvonne; it was as if he thought she was in a feud with Yvonne.

Debra felt depressed, and her heart continued to ache. She turned and walked down the mountain to calm herself.

...

Meanwhile, at the Guang Ping Palace in New World's Royal City.

Lord Kenny sat in the study room; his face was pale. He was furious and in shock.

His confidant, Tyler, stood in front of him, but he looked uncomfortable and fearful.

"Tyler, you have been with me for so many years, and I have always trusted you. I told you, you need to make Darryl disappear; no matter the sacrifice. However, it doesn't seem like the guy is dead. He even destroyed the Incandescent Sect. What is your explanation?"

Apart from anger, Lord Kenny also felt a conflicted emotion in his heart.

Matteo, the Incandescent Sect's Deputy Sect Master Matteo, had injured his wife and his child.

Lord Kenny had sworn that he would seek revenge for that.

Chapter 942

Lord Kenny was delighted to hear that the Incandescent Sect was destroyed.

However, when he knew that the person who ended the Incandescent Sect was Darryl, Lord Kenny's emotion spiralled downward; he was furious beyond description.

Tyler was terrified of Lord Kenny's anger; he replied immediately, "Lord Kenny, please calm down. I will pressure the Spiritual Invisible Sect again and tell them to take faster action."

Tyler was incredibly anxious.

The Spiritual Invisible Sect was the strongest assassins' organization in the New World. Why was it so difficult for them to kill Darryl?

...

The next day, at the little city on Mount Mingwang.

Even though it was not a big city, it was very merry. When it was nearly noontime, the busy street was crowded with people.

A slim figure was amongst those people. She had exquisite facial features, and she was dressed in a long white dress that showed off her perfect body line. She looked as elegant as a goddess. ❶

It was Debra.

Debra had left the mountain the previous night to calm down. She had arrived at the city without realizing it.

The saying 'a beautiful woman would attract attention no matter where she went' rang true. The crowd on the street would focus their eyes on Debra—no matter intentionally or unintentionally.

Gulp!

Countless men secretly swallowed their saliva. Some wanted to flirt with her, but they were forced to abort their intentions when they detected her strong aura.

Debra loitered on the streets for a while; her mood was much better than the previous night.

Debra had gathered her thoughts. If someone had accused her of injuring Jewel the previous night, Darryl would not have believed that too. Why should she be angry at him?

She was still unsure of Jewel's condition, so she decided to rush back after she

had bought something to eat.

Soon, Debra found a restaurant.

The kind restaurant owner arranged a seat for Debra in an exquisite room on the second floor; he acted as if he had not seen such a beautiful woman.

As soon as she sat down after she entered the room, a commotion next door attracted her attention.

A few people sat around a table in the room next door.

Among them was a man with a black and white robe; he looked smart and confident.

It was Yoel from the Spiritual Invisible Sect. Another two of them were elite assassins from the same sect. All three of them were there to support Lanvin in her mission.

Yoel took a sip of his tea and said, "Sh*t! It is so tiring to assassinate Darryl. Do you have any news about him? Is he still on Mount Mingwang?"

His companions looked at each other; one of them shook his head and spoke angrily, "He should still be there. We have familiarized ourselves with the mountain's geographical structure. We can sneak in tomorrow night to set up an ambush. We can work closely with Sister Lanvin, and the four of us should be able to kill Darryl without alerting anyone else."

Yoel was delighted; he clapped his hands. "That's great! Let's discuss it when Sister Lanvin gets here."

Bang!

Suddenly, the door to their room collapsed. Debra stepped into the room; she had a cold expression on her face.

Wow! How pretty!

Yoel and the rest were stunned. They stared intensely at Debra—their breathing labored.

Why were there so many beautiful women in the world? Lanvin looked much less attractive than her.

Was she a goddess from heaven?

Debra did not wait for them to gather their thoughts; she said coldly, "You want to kill Darryl?"

Even though the men had spoken rather softly, Debra could still hear them from her room next door.

Yoel furrowed his brows as he seized Debra up. "Who are you?" he asked defensively.

"I'll ask you again, why do you want to kill Darryl?" Debra exuded a strong aura.

Gulp!

As he felt Debra's aura, Yleo could not help but swallow his saliva. He tried his best to calm down. He faked a smile and said, "What does this have to do with you?"

"What does it have to do with me?" Debra smiled briefly.

Bang!

An intense aura exploded from her body!

Then, a green jade fan appeared in Debra's hand. The jade fan had extremely sharp edges, and it could open and close as it released green rays!

"Hey, Pretty Lady! Hang on! Hang on!" Yoel's body shook, and his mind spun. He was not dumb; he knew that Debra was ready to attack them!

"Pretty Lady, I want to assassinate Darryl, and I know you want to kill me too. Before I die, I have something to say." Yleo gulped. He knew that it was impossible for him to explain himself. He rolled his eyes, put his hands behind his back and pulled out a needle.

It was a silver needle, and it was the Spiritual Invisible Sect secret weapon, the Rain Flower Needle.

Its tip had some anesthetic powder. If it were to prick a person, then they would drop unconscious, no matter their strength!

"Whatever you want to say, be quick!" Debra said coldly.

She was the Artemis Sect's Sect Master. Even though she had a high position, she would never kill an innocent person. However, they had wanted to kill Darryl—that had crossed her line. She must get rid of them—there and then.

Yoel gulped and spoke softly, "Do you know why do we want to assassinate Darryl?"

"Why?" Debra asked with furrowed brows.

"It's because—" Yoel stepped forward; he twisted his wrist and charged unexpectedly at Debra with the silver needle in his hand.

Chapter 943

The silver needle on Yoel's hand was as fast as a shooting star! In the blink of an eye, it had arrived right in front of Debra!

Debra furrowed her brows. She did not expect the man was so cunning that he would ambush her so suddenly.

However, Yoel's little trick could never harm Debra. She was the Artemis Sect's Sect Master, and she had many years of experience under her belt. She would not panic, no matter any dangerous situation.

"You are asking for your death."

At that critical moment, Debra shouted as she lifted and waved her hand lightly to form a layer of protective shield.

Clang!

Yoel's silver needle hit the protective with a clang; the man sweated profusely. He was surprised that the lady could block his Rain Flower Needle so easily!

Wow!

Yoel and his companions were stunned; they looked at Debra in shock!

'This woman is terrifying.'

"You can die now." Debra said coldly as she stared intensely at Yoel. One could feel the deadly aura from her body as she spoke.

A strong aura circled Debra's body as she punched at Yoel.

The air around them immediately froze!

Yoel had the shock of his life. He wanted to step back to avoid the attack, but it was too late!

Bang!

The punch landed on Yoel's chest!

Yoel felt his heart went rigid; his eyes opened wide as he stared intensely at Debra. He could feel all of his internal organs as they smashed into pieces! One could see the dissatisfaction in Yoel's lifeless eyes as he dropped dead onto the ground.

What?

It was only one punch!

'Just one punch and she had killed Brother Yoel?'

The other two Spiritual Invisible Sect assassins looked at each other; they were terrified.

The next moment, both of them drew their long blades. Each of them stood Debra's left and right sides—they had flanked her.

They were fast and synchronized as they blocked Debra's escape routes.

Debra's face was cold. Then, she casually punched twice again!

Bang! Bang!

In the shortest time for a breath, both assassins took a hit each. Just like Yoel, they could not even shout in pain—they had died on the spot!

Wow!

The people in the restaurant had gathered to watch the fight when they heard the noises. They saw three men laid dead on the ground, and the entire restaurant was in chaos. Many of the guests screamed in fear, and even the restaurant owner and his workers were stunned.

Debra's face was cold; she did not look at the three bodies but leapt down lightly from the second floor.

"You killed them!"

She heard a trembling voice from behind her.

Debra turned, and she saw Lanvin behind her. That woman looked furious as her body shook!

Lanvin had rushed to the restaurant from the inn. Just as she arrived, she saw Debra killed Yoel and his two companions.

Lanvin was furious, but she did not act recklessly.

She knew that the woman in front of her was very powerful and not one to be trifled with!

"Are you their accomplice?" Debra asked in a cold voice as she stared at Lanvin calmly.

Even though her voice was soft, it sounded terrifying.

Chapter 944

Lanvin bit her lips. "No, I am not."

At that moment, Lanvin sweated profusely. She was worried that she would also be killed if she were to admit to that.

Debra smiled briefly and ignored Lanvin. She looked around the entire restaurant and announced, "Listen up, all of you, I am Debra Gable, and I am also Darryl's woman. The three men I killed had wanted to assassinate Darryl, which meant that I had to destroy them! I don't know if they have any more accomplices in this restaurant, but I advise them not to even think about it. I will be by Darryl's side night and day, and I will kill whoever dares to harm him!"

Then, Debra turned and left the restaurant.

The other patrons in the restaurant looked at each other. None of them had dared to breathe loudly the entire time.

...

Meanwhile, at the Incandescent Sect's main altar on Mount Mingwang.

Darryl sat on the bed in a room and hugged Yvonne in his arms.

Even though it was a very touching scene, the atmosphere was dull.

"Yvonne, once Dax and Chester come back, we shall return to the World Universe," he said as he gently stroked Yvonne's fringe on her forehead.

Darryl was upset. He had used his internal energy to treat Jewel's injuries the previous night. Even though her condition was stable, she was still unconscious.

All the Elysium Gate disciples had searched Mount Mingwang the entire night, but they could not find her attacker.

As they could not locate the killer, Darryl did not wish to stay there even a single minute longer. He suspected that it was Matteo and his sister who had attacked Jewel.

He had destroyed Incandescent Sect; the siblings would never let that go. However, they hid in the dark, so there was nothing he could do about that.

They had attacked Jewel the day before, and they could go after Debra and Yvonne next.

Knock! Knock!

Suddenly, someone knocked on the door. It sounded very light.

Darryl stood up quickly and went to open the door. He was delighted when he saw who was at the door. "Debra, you have returned."

It was Debra.

Debra nodded and asked as she looked at Darryl. "How is Jewel?"

She and Jewel were like sisters; she wanted to know her condition the moment she got back.

Darryl looked upset; he sighed and said, "Still unconscious."

Darryl was distraught. Ever since he had met Jewel, he had sworn that he would not let any harm befall the young woman. She had no family or relatives; she had wandered around since she was young; it was a heartbreaking situation.

It had not even been a year since he swore to protect her, and yet, he had failed because of his carelessness.

Debra sighed when she heard that. She saw Yvonne in the room, but she did not say anything even though she wanted to speak out. She knew that she had seen someone resembling Yvonne attack Jewel.

"What happened?" Darryl asked.

...

Meanwhile, it was late evening on a street outside the city. Lily rushed on her journey, tiringly.

The Black Wind Sect had locked her in a rock cave, but she had managed to find a secret exit. That was how she escaped.

Lily never thought that she could be able to escape from the Black Wind Sect.

When they caught her, she realized that Lanvin had deliberately sent her to that area with hopes that the Black Wind Sect would harm her. So, when she escaped those bandits, she did not want to look for her senior sister any more.

However, her heart clenched when she thought of the fact that Lanvin wanted to kill Darryl. She could not let her succeed, so she had no choice but to go back to her.

Lily's only motivation was to stay alive so that she could see Darryl one more time from afar. There would be no meaning to her life if anything were to happen to that man.

There were many pedestrians on the road, but Lily did not care about them.

All she wanted to do was return to the city to look for Lanvin and find out if they

had injured Darryl.

Chapter 945

"Lily?"

Lily was in a rush, so she was surprised when a voice called out to her. She was stunned, but she turned around to take a look. She was shocked to see that person.

She saw Lanvin, who looked surprised to see her. There was also a horse carriage behind her.

Three men laid on the carriage floor—their faces were pale, and there was no sign that they were alive.

The bodies were Yoel and the other two elite assassins from the Spiritual Invisible Sect.

Lily felt her heart spun.

'What happened? How did they die?'

'Did they kill Darryl already?' Lily's heart clenched. She walked toward the woman. "Sister Lanvin, what happened? How did Brother Yoel die?"

Lily was extremely worried. She did not care about Yoel's death, but she was concerned that they might have killed Darryl!

Lanvin looked at Lily coldly and said, "Yesterday, Darryl's woman named Debra killed them."

Lanvin's eyes were cold. She continued to ask, "Didn't I tell you to go to the Black Wind Mountain?"

There were doubts in Lanvin's mind.

How did Lily not die after she went to the Black Wind Sect? What a miracle!

Lily bit her lips and said, "I did. I went to the Black Wind Mountain and was captured by the Black Wind Sect. I managed to escape later. Sister, what should we do? Are we not going to kill Darryl?"

Three of them had already died; one would consider the mission a failure.

Would the Spiritual Invisibility Sect abort the mission?

If that were the case, her husband would be safe, and she would not need to worry about his safety daily.

Lanvin clenched her teeth and growled, "The Spiritual Invisible Sect would never give up. We'll send their bodies back to the Spiritual Invisible Sect and then make

a decision later. This mission is too difficult; we may need my master's help."

Lanvin's master was Deputy Sect Master Crystal Neal.

What?

The Deputy Sect Master would join the mission?

Lily was shocked to hear that. The Deputy Sect Master was scarily powerful; it was rumored that her target could never escape. Darryl would be in real danger if the Deputy Sect Master were to join their mission.

Lanvin saw Lily's reaction, so she asked, "Why are you so worried? You look like you are concerned about that man."

Lanvin observed Lily as she continued to say, "Ever since you knew this mission's target, you have been distracted and unfocused. Tell me the truth; do you know Darryl?"

Lanvin raised her voice for the last sentence; she sounded intimidating.

"I—"

Lily bit her lips; she started to panic.

Lanvin did not give her any chance to think; she shouted, "Tell me honestly! Do you know Darryl?"

Lanvin got even more suspicious when Lily panicked.

When Lanvin pressured her for an answer, Lily knew that she could no longer hide that fact. She nodded and said, "I know him. He is my husband."

What?

Husband?

Chapter 946

Lanvin was stunned when she heard that!

"You're so ugly, but Darryl is your husband?" Lanvin pursed her lips. Her next words were quite mean. "He is the Elysium Sect's Sect Master; do you think he will like you? Stop your fantasies, okay?"

"I am telling the truth." Lily panicked and tried to explain. "I didn't used to look like this. Senior Sister, when we returned to the Spiritual Invisible Sect, can you please help me to beg the Deputy Sect Master to abort this mission?"

Since she had exposed her identity, she should just tell the truth.

Lanvin furrowed her brows as she stared coldly at Lily. "Abort the mission? How dare you say something like that? The Spiritual Invisible Sect would never fail a mission that we've accepted, even if you and Darryl were together before this..."

Lanvin suddenly paused. There was fury in her eyes as she turned and said, "I knew it! You were the one who betrayed us! You must have exposed our plans to Darryl, which was how he sent Debra to kill Yoel and the others. Isn't that right?"

What?

Lily's body shivered. "Sister, what are you saying? I did not—"

She did not wait for Lily to finish her sentence. "Shut your mouth! You don't need to cover any more. It must have been you!"

"No, Sister, you have misunderstood. I didn't do that!"

"Didn't you? You just said that Darryl is your husband. You must have told him that the Spiritual Invisible Sect wanted to assassinate him. Otherwise, how could Debra locate Yoel and the others so quickly?"

"I—" Lily's face looked terrible; she could not defend herself, so she felt bullied. Lanvin had sent her to the Black Wind Sect to harm her, and then she had accused Lily of betraying the Spiritual Invisible Sect.

How unfair was that?

"You leaked information about your sect, and that is the same as betraying us. You do not deserve to be a disciple of the Spiritual Invisible Sect!"

Lanvin moved and charged straight toward Lily!

"Senior Sister—"

Lily was taken by surprise; she wanted to avoid the attack, but it was too late.

Lanvin was too fast for her, and her power was much stronger than Lily. As the Spiritual Invisible Sect's famous cold killer, there was no way Lily could defend herself.

Bang!

Lanvin had sealed Lily's acupoint almost immediately. Her body shivered, and she could not move at all.

Lanvin was not bothered to speak with Lily. She threw the woman onto the carriage and said coldly, "Not only are you ugly, but your heart is also evil. You've caused the death of Yoel and the other; we will sentence you when we've returned to the Spiritual Invisible Sect."

Lanvin rode the horse carriage toward the direction of the Spiritual Invisible Sect.

Lily was angry and worried; she wanted to break free, but her acupoint was sealed. She could not even move.

Meanwhile, at the Incandescent Sect's main altar on Mount Mingwang.

All the Elysium Gate disciples had gathered at the main hall; they were ready to depart to the World Universe.

Dax and Chester had only just returned. The three brothers had destroyed the Incandescent Sect only a few days ago, and Dax and Chester went to chase after Matteo and his sister. However, they did not manage to catch up with them. The brothers had wandered around to look for the sibling, but they could not locate them. So, they decided to go back.

At that moment, Darryl sighed as he carried Jewel. She had severe injuries, and as she was not a cultivator, it would take a longer time for her to heal. Even though Darryl had used some of his internal energy to retain her life, she was still unconscious.

Jewel needed a long period of healing. She also needed some treasures from all over the world to aid her recovery.

Darryl's godfather from the Carter family had a lot of those treasures.

So, they need to return as soon as possible.

However, Darryl felt dissatisfied to leave just like that. He felt empty as if someone was missing. He turned to look at Yvonne and said, "Yvonne, do you know where Monica is?"

That was right—Darryl's heart missed the Cult Mistress.

Chapter 947

The Cult Mistress had been pregnant with his baby; the child should be about a year old then. Back at the Wishing Star Tower battle, Florian had abducted Yvonne and Monica, so Yvonne should know where Monica was.

However, Yvonne looked indifferent as she said, "I don't know."

What?

She did not know?

Darryl was stunned.

The man snapped back to his senses. His eyes were desperate as he said, "You were both abducted by Florian, right?"

Yvonne shook her head. "I don't know." There was no emotion on her face.

Darryl sighed; he was dead worried about Monica.

...

Meanwhile, at the Spiritual Invisible Sect on Spiritual Invisible Mountain.

Light smoke circled in the valley as warm sunlight shone; it felt like heaven.

However, the atmosphere in the Spiritual Invisible Sect's main hall was depressing.

Their Deputy Sect Master, Crystal, sat in the middle of the main hall. Her exquisite face was icy.

Lanvin and a few hundred elite Spiritual Invisible Sect disciples stood quietly beside her.

Lily stood somewhere below them; her face was pale. She could not move as her acupoint was sealed.

Yoel's and his companions' bodies laid beside her.

"I have a question, Lily." Crystal looked at Lily quietly; her face did not show any emotion. "Why did you betray our sect?! You have caused the death of Yoel and the others!"

Crystal's eyes were full of sorrow. Yoel and the other two dead men were the Spiritual Invisible Sect's younger generation disciples and elite assassins. What a waste for them to die just like that!

Lily bit her lips as her body trembled slightly. "I didn't do that."

"Didn't you?"

Crystal's face darkened. "Your senior sister told me everything. You don't need to deny it anymore."

Crystal waved her hands at Lanvin. "Beat her up!"

Lanvin immediately obeyed that order. She took a soft belt and walked toward Lily!

Once she reached in front of her, Lanvin's eyes were cold. "Hey, Ugly! You sent a message to Darryl and caused the death of three disciples. How dare you still not admit it!"

Slap!

Lanvin started to hit Lily's body with the soft belt in her hands.

The soft belt was extremely strong, with thorns on the surface. Fresh blood oozed from the wounds, and Lily's long dress was thoroughly wet.

Lily shouted in pain; she wanted to fight back, but she could not move at all.

Crystal, who sat at the side, lifted the teacup and sipped her tea. "Lily, the Spiritual Invisible Sect had treated you kindly. When you were barely alive, Sect Master was gracious enough to bring you back here. Not only did she rescue you, but she also accepted you as a disciple. You've worked hard to cultivate for the past year, and I am impressed and had high hopes for you. But what did you do? This was only your first mission, and you have caused the death of other disciples. Are you not guilty?!"

"Deputy Sect Master, I—" Lily's tears almost fell, and her lips were pale. "I didn't betray our sect; I did not send a message to Darryl."

"If I wanted to meet Darryl, I would have met him long ago. Why do I have to wait until now? How can I meet my husband with this face..."

Lanvin swung the belt at her again. "Hey, Ugly! How dare you not admit it? Do you mean I have falsely accused you? You said that Darryl is your husband. If he is your husband, then you must have been the one to send him the message. This is not a blind accusation!"

Wow!

At that time, the other disciples stared at Lily. They felt conflicted.

Crystal's emotion darkened. "Lily, is Darryl really your husband?"

Lily nodded with complicated emotions in her eyes. "Yes..."

"Then you must have been the one who told him?!" Crystal said coldly.

Chapter 948

Sigh!

Lily took a deep breath as she clenched her teeth and said determinedly, "I did not."

"Great! Great!"

Crystal was furious; she pointed her finger at Lily. "You still deny it. Continue to hit her; hit her until she admits it!"

Lanvin swung the soft belt again.

Slap! Slap! Slap!

The sound of the beating made everyone feel intimidated.

However, Lily clenched her teeth hard to withstand the pain; she did not shout.

Soon, the dress on Lily's body was covered entirely with blood. She was extremely weak, but her eyes were determined.

Even though Lily looked soft and weak, she had a strong personality.

She would not deny if she did something wrong. However, if she did not do it, then she would never admit it, even if she needed to die.

Crystal realized that Lily was about to faint, so she stood up and raised her hand gently.

Lanvin put the soft belt away, but she looked at Lily with a vengeance.

"Lily, I am giving you one last chance. Do you admit to it?"

Crystal strolled toward Lily.

Lily felt nothing but the pain in her body. She did not have the energy to speak, but her face still looked determined as she shook her head.

Crystal slammed her fists on the table; she looked so furious as her eyes shone. "If that is the case, don't blame me for the consequences."

Bang!

An intense aura exploded from Crystal's body.

The next second, Crystal lifted her hand and punched Lily's abdomen. Her intense energy smashed upon Lily and crushed her stomach!

Argh!

Lily shouted; she felt as if the only energy she had in her whole body had disappeared!

Crystal said coldly, "You are biased for your personal matters and harmed your fellow disciples. You do not deserve to be the Spiritual Invisible Sect's disciple. I have destroyed your internal energy in your abdomen. Tomorrow, you will be sentenced to your death; you can apologize to Yoel and the others personally!"

Then, Crystal turned to the other disciples and said, "Lock her in the dungeon; she will be sentenced to the Thousand Slices and Million Cuts at three in the afternoon!"

Wow!

The Spiritual Invisible Sect disciples gasped.

The Thousand Slices and Million Cuts punishment was the most terrifying punishment for any traitors in the Spiritual Invisible Sect. Hundreds of thousands of steel blades would be put on a slope, and they would roll the traitor on that hill.

One would have been cut into tiny pieces before they reached the lowest level.

The hall was dead silent. Everyone looked at Lily with a cold expression; they did not pity her at all.

They thought that Lily had caused the death of her fellow disciples; that act was unforgivable. One should not betray their own kind, but Lily had betrayed the Spiritual Invisible Sect. Even though she was sentenced to die immediately, they did not feel guilty about it!

Lanvin led a few disciples to drag Lily out of the main hall and into the dungeon.

Lily began to cry as she waited in the dungeon. Her entire body shook uncontrollably. She felt utterly hopeless as she looked at the copper and steel wall.

"Darryl, your Lilybud can no longer hang on this time. We'll meet again in our next lives. I can't protect you any longer."

Chapter 949

At the Mid City with the Carter family.

The weather was good as the sun shone; the entire mansion was peaceful and joyful.

Zoran enjoyed his tea casually in the main hall.

Darryl sat beside him, and there were worries in between his brows. He was upset.

Since Darryl led the Elysium Gate back from the New World, he went straight to the Carter family. Once he arrived at the mansion, he let Jewel consume treasures from all the other worlds. She was much better after that. Her breathing pattern had stabled, but she was still unconscious. Jewel was not a cultivator; her recovery ability was too weak.

However, that was not why Darryl was upset.

When they returned from the New World, Darryl wanted to dig some news about Monica from Yvonne.

However, Yvonne said that she did not know anything.

Darryl had no choice but to leave some Elysium Gate disciples to investigate Monica's news in the New World. Without the Cult Mistress by his side, Darryl felt as if his heart was empty. He was not excited to do anything else.

"Darryl."

Zoran put his teacup down and laughed as he looked at Darryl. "Don't worry; you have to take everything slowly."

Zoran sighed when he realized that Darryl was still upset. Even though Darryl was not his son by birth, he was much more than that. He did not wish to see him so devastated.

Darryl laughed bitterly. "Godfather, I am fine."

Zoran patted him on his shoulder. "Darryl, your emotion is shown clearly on your face. As a man, one should never panic and worry. A man must try to keep himself calm. Why don't you do some writing or drawing in my study? Try to relax. Your mood will worsen if you think about nonsense."

"very well..." Darryl nodded and went to the study room.

'Godfather is right. Instead of staying upset, it would be better if I do some writing and painting to keep myself calm.'

Zoran had three hobbies—reading, writing and drinking tea. So, his study room was quite unique. The number of books he had in his study room was comparable to a library.

A long study table was in the study room—pen, ink, and paper were arranged neatly on it.

Some said that writing could relax one's emotions, and they were right. Once Darryl stood in front of the study table, he felt much better, but he did not know what to write or draw.

Right!

Darryl slapped his leg; he stood up and went into his room to take a set of writings.

The writings were a gift from Samson—it was Wang Xizi's Ping'an Tie. It was invaluable, and Darryl had kept it properly.

Since he did not know what to write, he planned to copy some of the pages.

Darryl opened the Ping'an Tie and started to copy it carefully as he grumbled in his heart—each stroke was done extremely carefully.

Soon, Darryl was engrossed in his writing, and his heart had calmed completely.

...

Meanwhile, at the Spiritual Invisible Mountain.

It was the middle of the night, and Lily was tied and left in the deep creepy dungeon. She could not move at all.

The night was cold, and Lily's weak body shook uncontrollably. Her entire body was also painful beyond any description.

Lanvin had beaten her with a belt in the morning. The beating was so intense that it almost took Lily's life.

Chapter 950

Lily's face was pale, and her surroundings were cold; she might not be able to last the night.

'Am I really going to die in this dungeon tonight?'

Lily bit her lips as she hugged her knees with both arms. She squatted and felt much warmer. However, her face was still full of disappointment. 'Even if I could last the night, what will happen next? Tomorrow I'll need to go through Thousand Slices Million Cuts—I still can't escape death.'

Lily felt disappointed as she thought about that.

Chirp!

Suddenly, she heard sounds of footsteps from outside the dungeon door. They sounded light! A few seconds later, after some light noise and vibration, the dungeon door was pushed open slightly. Then, a slim body rushed in quickly.

Who was that?

'Did Sister Lanvin come to torture me again?'

Lily's heart trembled; she thought that was Lanvin. However, once she looked clearly, her face showed joy. "Sister Cece?"

Under the dark rays of the night, she could see the lady in front of her had exquisite features, and her body figure was alluring. One would think that she was gentle and attractive.

That lady was Cece, and she was Lily's Fifth Sister. Other than the Sect Master, Cece was the one who treated Lily kindly amongst everyone in the sect. Everyone despised Lily and hated her ugly face, but Cece did not mind her.

Lily was surprised and delighted to see Cece. She had never imagined that she would visit her discreetly in the dungeon at night.

"Fifth Sister, why are you here?" Lily asked.

"Don't ask so much for now." Cece took a cautious look outside. She walked over quickly and removed the chains on Lily's body. Her beautiful face was full of worry as she said softly, "Lilybud, how are you?"

Even though Lily's face was ugly, Cece knew that she was a kind-hearted woman. So, amongst the disciples in the entire Spiritual Invisible Sect, Cece treated Lily as her friend and a good sister.

Cece's heart ached when she saw how Lily was treated that morning.

"Fifth Sister, I am fine." Lily's face was pale, but she managed to force a smile. Lily's heart clenched, and she almost cried.

Lily felt so wronged! 'I did not betray the Spiritual Invisible Sec; why didn't anyone believe me?'

Cece's heart ached as she looked at Lily. "I struck the dungeon guard until he fainted. You need to leave immediately—the further the better!"

Cece out a bottle of enchanted medicine for wounds and handed it to Lily. "Take this medicine. Never return after you've left the Spiritual Invisible Mountain."

"Fifth Sister..." Lily looked blankly at Cece. "You are letting me go?"

Sigh!

Cece sighed and smiled, "Lilybud, even though we have not known each other for long, I do know you. If you say that you did not do that, then you must not have done it. Even though everyone accused and doubted you, but I believed you."

When she heard that, Lily could no longer control her emotions; she immediately fell into Cece's arms and started to cry.

"It's fine... Everything is okay..." Cece hugged her tightly; her heart ached as well. "Lilybud, there is not much time. Listen to me; you need to leave now."

As she spoke, she dragged Lily and quickly walked out of the dungeon.

Under the darkness of the night, both of them left the Spiritual Invisible Mountain. Lily held Cece's hands as she continued to cry. "Fifth Sister, I am not sure when I will see you again, but I will miss you..."

"It's okay, don't cry." Cece cupped her face in between her palms and said, "I will miss you too, but you really need to go now. You will die if you stay here. It is getting late; leave immediately."

Lily choked back her tears and nodded. She turned to look at her fifth sister one more time before she finally clenched her teeth and left.

Chapter 951

Meanwhile, at the Carter mansion.

For the past two days, if he did not need to take care of Jewel, Darryl would spend his time in the study room to write and draw.

Debra had been by Darryl's side for the past two days as well. She really liked the quietness of the study.

Debra loved Darryl very much. Wherever he went, she would want to follow him. So, she enjoyed watching Darryl write. Furthermore, she thought that the man's calligraphy was beautiful.

At that moment, Darryl sat by the study table and quietly wrote his calligraphy. Debra was beside him; she read a book of poetry.

"Hmm?" Suddenly, Debra trembled. Her red lips parted as she said, "Can somebody tell me what's love supposed to be? That makes death a beauty so long you're with me..."

She recited the poem once again before she cocked her head and looked at Darryl in surprise. "Darryl, was this not the poem you wrote? Why would it be in this book of ancient poetry collection?

"What? Uh..." Darryl scratched his head. He turned around with an incredibly awkward expression.

Damn it! Darryl had pretended to be a scholar when he was at the Great East, so he took poems from famous ancient poets from the World Universe and used them as his own. He did not expect that Debra would follow him to the World Universe. It seemed like he would be exposed soon...

Darryl chuckled; he did not know how to react. "I..."

"What should I do?"

"Tsk, tsks." Darryl's helplessness amused Debra. She said gently, "Look at how panicked you are right now. I did like you because of all the poems you recited. However, after I've known you for some time, I like you because of who you are. You're loyal, just, and righteous—that's why I'm so devoted to you."

Debra looked at Darryl with admiration. "Even if you stole some ancient poet's poem as yours, it does not matter."

Muah!

Debra did not know what to think; she approached Darryl and lightly pecked his

cheeks.

Darryl only felt a whiff of fragrance on his face, but he immediately felt spirited. He reached out and grabbed Debra at her waist; he was about to give her a deep kiss.

Suddenly, a female voice echoed from the door.

"Darryl! Debra!"

Sara pushed the door open and ran in as she hummed a song. She approached them and giggled. "Darryl, did you do any calligraphy today?"

"Uh..." Darryl's hand was still awkwardly around Debra. He quickly withdrew his hand. Sara was still young; the scene was not suitable for her.

When Sara entered the room, the lovey-dovey atmosphere in the air was interrupted.

Debra smiled and held Sara's hand; she could not hide her fondness for the girl. She always had something nice to say about everyone, and she was cute and well-behaved too. Anyone who met Sara would like her.

"You cheeky girl! Are you taking my calligraphy work to show off to your friends again?" Darryl put the brush down and looked at Sara with a smile.

Two days ago, Sara stumbled upon Darryl's copy of the Ping'an Tie in the study. She loved and admired it. She took the copy and said that she wanted to let her friends see it.

Darryl loved Sara, so he agreed to let her take it. After all, it was just a copy and not his autographed version.

When he saw Sara again, he could not help but tease her.

Sara said excitedly, "Darryl! You're amazing! Your Ping'an Tie was too amazing! My friends thought it was the real version! By the way, I've given it to a friend of mine. She liked it very much, so she begged me for it. I could decline her, so I gave it to her. Darryl, please don't be angry..."

Darryl laughed. He ruffled her hair and pretended to be angry. "Of course, I'm angry. You gave my stuff to other people. How can I not get angry?"

"I..." Sara lowered her head like a child who felt guilty for a mistake.

"Why not? If you massage my leg, then I won't be angry anymore," Darryl said as he laughed.

"Hmm, hmm!" Sara blushed and crouched in front of Darryl as she cautiously massaged his leg. She said, "Also, I heard that there would be an antique

exhibition tomorrow in Mid City. It's going to be a lively affair! This exhibition will have a lot of antique and paintings. Why don't we all go and take a look tomorrow? I hear many celebrities will be there too. It's going to be fun!"

'An antique exhibition?' Darryl wondered to himself. He did not give it much thought as he said, "I don't want to. It's so boring!"

If he wanted to see antiques, he would rather go to Yvonne's house. The antiques in her mansion would be much more exciting than any exhibition.

Sara got anxious. She tugged on Darryl's arms and said pleadingly, "Please, let's go. Debra has been here for such a long time, and you have not brought her around. You let her cooped up here with you in the study, and it's so boring! Also, I want to go too. I want you to accompany me. I hear that there will be many celebrities there. I want to meet them..."

Chapter 952

Sara's eyes were filled with hope.

When she saw how Sara behaved, Debra laughed at the girl. She looked at Darryl and said, "Why don't we take Sara to have a look tomorrow?"

Sara was right; Debra had wanted to take a good look around and learn the people and culture a little better ever since she had arrived in the World Universe. Debra was especially interested in paintings and calligraphy. After all, she was the Artemis Sect's Sect Master. She was extremely skilled in chess, music, literature, art, and many others.

When she heard that the exhibition would have many paintings and calligraphy, she was tempted to have a look.

Since Sara and Debra were excited to go, Darryl laughed and nodded. "Okay, then! Let's go have a look tomorrow."

"Yay! I know you treat me the best!" Sara cheered at Darryl's agreement. She immediately hugged Darryl and then happily exited the study.

...

At the Lyndon Residence in Donghai City.

Samantha was in the living room; she wore a pair of navy blue skinny jeans. Her alluring figure got better by the day. At that moment, she held a photo album in her hand, and she flipped through it.

The album was filled with Lily's photos. She looked at each picture for a very long time; she was extremely sad and depressed.

It had been more than a year. After Lily left halfway through the wedding ceremony, she had not contacted Samantha since then.

For the past year, Samantha had tried all sorts of ways to inquire about Lily's whereabouts, but to no avail.

At the same time, she had to bear with the various rumors.

Some people said that Lily had died a long time ago.

Some also said that Lily had followed Justin Quinn to the New World; their whereabouts still unknown.

No matter which rumor, it was a stab in Samantha's heart.

'My daughter, where are you? Can you hear me calling you?'

Samantha touched the photos lightly as tears formed in her eyes.

Knock! Knock!

Right at that moment, someone knocked on the door.

Samantha kept the photo album away and headed to answer it. "Who is it?"

She jumped back in surprise the moment she opened the door.

A petite figure covered in dirt stood there. When Samantha saw the person's face, she frowned.

'How can there be such an ugly girl?' It was true; Lily stood right in front of her.

When Cece released her, she went through many hardships to return to the World Universe. At least she was safely back in Donghai City, and back to her own house.

Finally, Samantha came to her senses, and said, "You—"

When she saw her mother in front of her, Lily could not hold back her tears. She yelled, "Mom, it's me, Lily! It's me!"

Samantha trembled. She almost lost her balance, but she held onto the door frame with her hand. Then, she looked at Lily.

"Lily... You're Lily..." Samantha was elated and heartbroken at the same time. She hugged Lily and said, "My daughter, what happened to your face?"

When she said that, Samantha's hand trembled. She touched Lily's face lightly; her heart was in pieces.

Her daughter used to have the most beautiful face; how did she become like that?

Lily did not answer her. The mother and daughter duo hugged each other as they continued to cry.

Chapter 953

They hugged for a long time when suddenly the phone rang. Samantha took her handphone and saw that it was a call from William.

"I'll have to take this call," Samantha said gently as she answered it.

"Granny wants to have an emergency family meeting. Come quick and don't be late!" William barked coldly the moment Samantha picked up, and then he hung up.

When he hung up, Samantha frowned.

Lily had only just returned. She wanted to spend time with her, but it seemed like Granny Lyndon wanted to have a family meeting.

When she saw Samantha's expression, Lily said gently, "Mom, it's late. If Granny wants to have a family meeting now, then it must be something important. Let's go have a look." ●

It had been more than a year, so Lily wondered if her relatives were alright.

Samantha sighed and nodded. "Alright."

As she said that, Samantha looked at Lily, her eyes were filled with concern. Lily had not changed at all; she was still a kind-hearted girl. She had only come back and barely had the chance to rest, but once she heard that her family had problems, she worried for them as well.

Lily went upstairs to shower and had a change of clothes; then she headed out together with Samantha. Lily did not forget to dress up a little, and she wore a mask to cover the ugly side of her face.

More than ten minutes later, Lily and Samantha reached Granny Lydon's mansion. When they were there, they noticed that there were many cars parked outside already.

At the moment, the hall in the mansion was filled with people. Granny Lyndon sat in the main seat. Her wrinkled face had a hint of gloominess to it.

No one spoke; the entire hall was in a suppressed silence.

A year ago, when Lily was about to wed Wade, the Lyndons thought that if they were to join forces with the Clements, they would become one of Donghai City's most influential families!

However, they did not expect the wedding to go awry. When Lily regained her memory, she escaped in search of Darryl. That incident made the Lyndons the

butt of everyone's joke.

It was not only that; in a year, Granny's investment did not come through. Lyndon Enterprise dwindled day by day. Until that day, their financial supply chain had been broken. They desperately needed 100 million bucks to keep them afloat; otherwise, the vast Lyndon Estate would collapse. However, who would invest 100 million into the Lyndon Estate?

At that moment, Lily and Samantha walked into the mansion.

The entire mansion went silent!

"This—"

"Lily?"

"Lily's back?"

Even though Lily wore a mask, they could still recognize her.

Suddenly, the entire hall was in a heated discussion. Many eyes were on Lily; they were filled with surprise and confusion. Each expression looked more exciting than the next.

"Lily?" Granny's muddy eyes sparkled as she called out to Lily.

Lily quickly walked toward her and said gently, "Granny, I'm back."

"Good. As long as you're back."

Granny Lydon's eyes sparkled as she smiled. "Lily, you came back at the right time. The Lyndon Estate is going bankrupt. I'm sure you can't bear to see us so bleak."

Granny looked at Lily in contempt. After all, it was because of Lily that the Lyndon family became the butt of everyone's joke in Donghai City. However, Granny Lyndon was a person with experience. She changed her thoughts for a new idea. They should let Lily help the family to find some investments.

Lily could not grasp the situation. She asked, "Granny, what is going on?"

Granny Lyndon sighed. "Our family business is in trouble. Our financial supply chain has been broken, and we need at least 100 million."

"Then..." Lily bit her lip. "What can I do to help?"

Granny Lyndon smiled and answered, "Of course, there is something you can do. I remember a few rich heirs who are still interested in you. I am prepared to pick one for you. When you get married, I'm sure your husband will not ignore us. Then, our problems will be solved."

William and the others came to their senses, and they nodded in agreement.

Chapter 954

"That's right..."

"Granny Lyndon always has a solution!"

The financial supply chain problem was a massive cause of headache for them. None of them could come up with a perfect solution.

Since Lily was back, things would not be too complicated to solve.

After all, Lily had been married twice, so a few more times would not hurt.

'What?' Lily trembled as she looked at Granny Lyndon in a daze. She was stunned.

She had only come back, yet they could not wait to marry her off again?

Did her happiness mean nothing to her family?

Samantha could not take it any longer. She said, "Lily just got back, and you all—"

Before she could finish her sentence, Granny Lyndon interrupted her. "You! Stop talking."

Then, she smiled and waved at Lily. "Lily is my granddaughter, so, of course, I'm concerned. I've not seen you for a year. Come, let me have a look at you."

Lily hesitated for a while before she walked toward her.

As soon as she moved toward Granny Lyndon, William stood up and reprimanded Lily, "Lily, when did you become so rude? Why are you wearing a mask in front of Granny?"

"Yes, you've only left for a year, and all your etiquette has gone out the window."

"Quickly, take off your mask, you rude girl."

Even though they needed to rely on Lily to save their family business, they still reprimanded Lily when they saw her in a mask.

After all, Lily had no rank nor power in the family.

Lily bit her lips. She hesitated for a few seconds before she took off her mask.

She did not have the dignity to face Darryl, but she did not need to hide in front of her family. After all, she still had to show herself to them eventually.

Gasp!

When they saw Lily's ugly face, the entire hall went silent. Then, they could not help but gasp.

Was that Lily?

How did she become so ugly?

"Lily, you—" Granny Lyndon was stunned. Then her voice turned cold. "What happened to your face?"

She could not hide the anger and surprise in her tone.

Her granddaughter used to be a beautiful woman. Since she had become ugly, which rich heir would want her?

"I finally understood why you came back so suddenly. It's because you've become ugly and Darryl did not want you anymore, am I right?" William thundered as he approached her.

The other family members started to point and comment on Lily.

"What an embarrassment!"

"Yes, she ran away for more than a year with no news at all. Now that she has become ugly, she is willing to come back?"

"Why are we still hoping that she can help turn the tables around? What good is she now?"

At that moment, they thought that there was no more value to Lily's name, so their words turned into insults.

Chapter 955

Lily was disappointed when she heard those jeers and insults. 'How could all these people still be so mean?'

"Stop talking!" Samantha pulled Lily behind her. She scanned her surroundings and said, "Lily is still family. Her face may have been ruined, and she is already upset about it, yet you still laugh and insult her. Do you not have any guilty conscience at all?"

"Conscience?"

"You're one to talk!" William stepped forward and looked at Samantha. He sneered, "One year ago when Lily was about to marry Wade, she made a fuss about how she loved Darryl and wanted to find him. This incident made our family the butt of everyone's joke in the entire Donghai City!

"Also, previously, Lily's father made huge losses in some investment. Have you forgotten about that? The reason our family is in a bad state today is because of you three!"

The rest nodded fervently in agreement.

"Yes, our family became like this because of you three!"

"What right do you both have to speak here?!"

Samantha's face flushed; she suddenly had no words.

William continued to say, "Lily, your mansion is currently worth quite a lot. Sell it to help us with our financials; take it as a way to make things up to your family."

Then, he looked at Granny Lyndon and said pleasingly, "Granny, what do you think of my idea?"

Granny Lyndon nodded in approval. Then, he looked coldly at Samantha and Lily. "Samantha, William is right. The two of you do not need to stay in such a huge mansion. You should stay somewhere with just one bed. That should be enough. Sell off your mansion."

'What? They want us to sell our house?'

Samantha and Lily shuddered, their faces paled. A long time ago, Samantha wanted to invest in the financial industry, so they had already sold the mansion once. However, they managed to get it back eventually.

"Granny," Lily could not take it anymore. She took a deep breath and said, "My dad incurred some huge losses in some bad investments for the Lyndon Estate.

Yes, that was his fault. However, Darryl helped us to pass through those hard times. Then, I also helped the family once again with the money I made from my live streams. Now that the family estate is in peril again, you ask us to sell our own house? That's not reasonable."

She was utterly disappointed in the entire Lyndon family.

Samantha stood up and said, "Yes. Why do we have to sell our own house? Based on what?"

"Based on what?" William said curtly. "When Lily's father's investments caused our family to lose all of our capital, he was involved in fraud! Since he was family, we were not calculative with him. Now that our family is in trouble, it is only right to ask you to sell your house to help us!"

"Yes! The Lyndons have treated you right, you ungrateful people!"

"Technically, you bought the mansion with the family's money..."

Lily panicked when she heard their accusations. "The mansion was bought with the money I made from live streams! Don't you dare talk nonsense..."

When they mentioned the mansion, Lily thought of Darryl again. When she did her live-streams previously, Darryl helped her to earn a lot of money. One could say that Darryl paid for almost half of the mansion.

So, no matter what, no one could touch that mansion!

William did not bother to say anything else. He sneered, "It's not up to you to decide whether to sell or not. Lily, we still have proof for when your father conned us out of our money. If you do not cooperate with us, then don't blame us for taking legal action against your father."

William smiled maliciously. "With such a huge amount of money scammed, even if your father is not in this country, he would not be able to run away from this."

The other family members had a scorned expression on their faces, too; they clearly supported William.

"What?"

Chapter 956

Lily trembled; her expression turned ugly.

Samantha was in despair too. She did not expect her family would become so heartless due to money.

"Granny—" Lily called out.

Granny Lyndon held onto her walking cane; she trembled as she stood up. Without any expression on her face, she said, "Lily, don't blame me for being heartless. William is right. If you two insist on being stubborn, we have no choice but to do this."

Samantha was livid. She wanted to retort, but Lily stopped her.

"Mom, leave it!" Lily took a deep breath and said slowly, "It's only about money, isn't it? We'll give it to them."

Then she looked at William and asked, "How much more do you need for the financial supply chain?"

William coldly said, "100 million."

'100 million!' Lily felt only bitterness in her heart. She gritted her teeth and said, "I'll send the money in a week."

Then, Lily pulled Samantha along and left the mansion.

...

At the Cercis Building in Mid City.

The building's entrance was bustling and lively! One could see many luxury vehicles at the gate because Mid City held an antique exhibition there.

The organizer for the exhibition was a person called Max Harrington. He was quite well-known in Mid City as he was the number one antique collector there. He was a famous figure!

There was a rumor that the exhibition would showcase many of his collections. The affluent people in Mid City were there to support him, and almost half of the city's population was there to socialize. The price of a ticket to the exhibition was 1000 bucks! Even though it was costly, it did not hinder passionate collectors from attending it. There was even a long queue at the entrance; they were in a line to enter the exhibition.

There was also a rumor that the organizers had invited many famous celebrities to perform there too. Besides antique collections, one could also see many stars

there, some A-listers included. So the 1000 bucks entry ticket was not expensive, after all!

The building entrance was already packed with luxury vehicles and people at eight in the morning. The exhibition had not even started.

At that moment, an MPV arrived at the Cercis building; it stopped at the entrance. Then, two beautiful ladies got down from the car—it was Debra Gable and Sara Carter!

Wow!

When both of them appeared, the crowd was in an uproar. Many men gasped; their eyes were as big as plates!

Debra wore a pair of skinny jeans; she looked ethereal, like a goddess during her descent from heaven. She was inexplicably regal and alluring. When she arrived at the World Universe, she no longer wore a cheongsam. She only wore a pair of understated black skinny jeans, but she looked incredibly sexy.

Sara, on the other hand, was in casual sportswear; she looked youthful and pretty.

Two gorgeous women—one charming, the other youthful and energetic; they immediately became everyone's center of attention!

Just as the crowd gawked at them, Darryl slowly emerged from the car. Then, Sara and Debra held onto Darryl's arm on each side.

Wow!

The crowd exploded in an uproar at that scene.

Who was that man that two gorgeous women would hold onto him at the same time?

Darryl was delighted when he felt those jealous glares. He had not wanted to go to the exhibition. However, Sara had bugged him, and even Debra had wanted to go. So, he had no choice but to tag along.

Chapter 957

"See, I was not wrong! The exhibition is quite lively!" Sara said happily. Her joyful expression was as if she was a little bird that had been let out of its cage.

Then, one of the exhibition staff walked forward and yelled through a megaphone. "Alright, the exhibition is now open! Please enter the hall in a queue, do not push, do not—"

Before he could finish, the people that were in queues swarmed into the exhibition hall.

The exhibition had many collections, assorted jades, calligraphy, and painting—it had everything! Everything from the Western Zhou dynasty until the end of the Qing dynasty—it had antiques from every dynasty.

The patrons entered the exhibition and started to take out their phones. They wanted to take photos of everything.

Darryl, Debra, and Sara admired the antique collections. Debra was not interested in antiques, but she was very curious about some ancient paintings and calligraphy.

Darryl noticed that the walls in the exhibition hall were filled with paintings and calligraphy works from famous people. However, there were also many fake copies.

"Look! Quick, look!"

Someone among the crowd yelled. They followed the voice and saw a work of calligraphy hung on a nearby wall. Everyone there sounded excited!

"No wonder he's the Sage of Calligraphy! Look at his work, it's eloquent and moving!"

"Yes! This work by Wang Xizhi is priceless!"

The crowd praised the work non-stop with words of admiration.

Debra pulled Darryl excitedly toward that direction to take a look.

When they were in front of the crowd, they could see that the calligraphy work was quite old; it was Wang Xizhi's Ping'an Tie!

Darryl almost laughed out loud. That was his writing!

Sara mentioned that she had given it to her friend. How did it get onto the exhibition's wall? Darryl laughed in his mind. It was apparent that someone had done something extra to make the work appear older, as if it was Wang Xizhi's

real autograph. The people in that era could really fake anything and everything. Even his own work was showcased in the exhibition!

Debra laughed lightly as she said to Darryl, "Why does this work look so familiar to me?"

Debra's voice was soft. She remembered Darryl's copy of the Ping'an Tie, though she did not think that the work in front of her was written by him.

Darryl waved his hand and laughed gently. "The work on the wall is fake; I was the one who did it..."

"What did you say?"

Before Darryl could finish his sentence, there was an uproar of accusations.

"Who is this person? How dare he say that the calligraphy work on the wall is a fake one?"

"Yes! Is he mentally unsound? The great collector, Max Harrington, organized this exhibition. Why would he collect fake imitations?"

Suddenly, the crowd was in a heated discussion. All of the crowd's eyes were on Darryl as they pointed at him in accusations.

At the same moment, a bespectacled man walked toward them and said, "Dude, you dare say that Max Harrington's collection of this Ping'an Tie is a fake one? Do you know calligraphy? Do you know anything about collecting antiques?"

Max Harrington was the exhibition's organizer. Everyone knew that he was an influential figure in the world of antiques. How could he have collected an imitation? That man had no manners at all, how dare he say it was a fake!

Darryl laughed lightly and replied, "I know a little about calligraphy."

"Just a little?" The bespectacled man sneered. He could not hide the disdain in his heart. "Then don't boast so unashamedly. People like you should not comment so casually on Max's collection."

Max Harrington was not only an antique collector; he was also an antique connoisseur! How could his antique collections be fake? That person's comments were really laughable.

When she realized that the atmosphere had turned sour, Debra tried to help Darryl soothe the crowd. "You are mistaken; he did not mean anything by it. It was just a casual comment."

She was there with Darryl to relax and have some fun; she did not want to see him in an argument with other people.

However, Darryl only smiled. He looked at the bespectacled man and said, "

Although I only know a little about calligraphy, I am not wrong. The Ping'an Tie in front of me is a fake."

Chapter 958

Darryl had not wanted to treat the matter so seriously. However, when he saw the expressions on the crowd's faces, he chuckled and commented on the Ping'an Tie.

What? How dared he commented so unabashedly?

The crowd immediately laughed and looked at Darryl condescendingly.

Then, right at the moment, there was a commotion at the staircase.

"Max Harrington is here!"

"Angela Angel... She's here too!"

A few people slowly approached them, accompanied by cheers and exclams from the crowd.

Among them was a middle-aged man who wore a deep blue Chinese jacket. Even though he had a gentle face, he had an intense aura that one could not take lightly. That man was Max Harrington.

A gorgeous and seductive lady with a petite figure stood next to him. She had long legs, and she was in a light purple long dress. Her body was alluring, and she had exquisite facial features and a head of pretty long hair. Her aura seemed regal.

She was a famous celebrity—Angela Angel. She was invited to the exhibition to perform for the crowd; many patrons had bought the tickets to see her.

When she saw Angela Angel, Darryl laughed.

When Angela held a concert in Donghai City, she organized an activity where she got the audience to write their wishes, fold them into a paper plane and throw it onto the stage.

Darryl had pretended to be Evelyn Featherstone's father. When he thought about it, he smiled.

"Master Max!"

"Angela, long time no see! You've become even more gorgeous!"

When Max and Angela appeared, the crowd greeted them happily.

Of course, most of the men's eyes fell onto Angela. She was so gorgeous that she became the center of attention wherever she went.

However, Darryl did not pay her too much attention. Even though Angela was

beautiful, she could barely compare to Debra.

Max smiled and waved at the crowd. He said, "It's so lively here. I see everyone likes the Ping'an Tie too!"

When he said that, the bespectacled man said in a flattering manner, "Master Max, your Ping'an Tie collection makes one delirious! No wonder it's one of the Sage of Calligraphy's most famous works! But this guy said that it is an imitation!"

He pointed at Darryl.

"A fake?" Max frowned and glared at Darryl. He spent a lot of money to acquire that piece! The Ping'an Tie's calligraphy was flowy and uninhibited—how could it be a fake?

The crowd's eyes fell onto Darryl once again. They discussed heatedly among themselves.

"Master Max, please don't bother with him. He's still young and naive! He does not even know how to appreciate good calligraphy!"

"Yes! It looks like he does not know anything, yet he can shamelessly comment on your collection. What a joke!"

Debra panicked and stomped her feet when everyone started to taunt Darryl. She bit her lips and tugged Darryl's hands. "Darryl, let's go!"

Darryl smiled and then nodded. He was about to leave with Debra and Sara. However, just as he turned, he could hear an irritated voice from behind them. "Dude, you can leave, but you have to apologize to me first! You said that my collection is fake; you have tarnished my reputation! You have to bear the consequences of your words. Apologize to me now!"

Chapter 959

"Yes, apologize to Master Max now!"

"Apologize!"

At the crowd's reprimands, Darryl slowly turned his head around and looked at Max. "Apologize? Why should I apologize? I may be direct, but I never lie. This Ping'an Tie is an imitation. Why should I apologize?"

The crowd got into an uproar.

That man was nuts! How could he be so rude to Master Max?

Debra was anxious as well. She knew that Darryl was a stubborn man.

Max glared at Darryl and asked, "What proof do you have that this is an imitation?"

Max had spent a considerable amount of money to acquire the Ping'an Tie. He had spent countless years studying calligraphy. He had also loved Wang Xizhi's work since he was young, so how could he be wrong?

At that moment, Angela Angel also said, "Mister, you said that the work is a fake. Do you have any proof?"

She sized Darryl up as she looked at him curiously. Why does that man look so familiar to her? It was as if she had seen him somewhere before that, but she could not pinpoint where.

Angela Angel was an A-list celebrity, so, how would she remember minor incidents during her concert? She was also not there when Don Angel crashed Lily with his car. So, she had only met Darryl once during the show, and she had long forgotten about it.

Angela liked to collect antiques, too; that was how she became friends with Max. When she saw Darryl questioned Max's collection, she was displeased as well.

Gasp!

Even Angela Angel had said something. The entire crowd's eyes were on Darryl as they anticipated his answer.

Darryl smiled and enunciated his words, "Because... I was the one who did this Ping'an Tie!"

What?

The crowd went silent before they roared in laughter.

Did they mishear him? He said that he wrote the Ping'an Tie? They continued to

laugh.

Debra shuddered and bit her lips. She had thought that the Ping'an Tie looked familiar. Then she realized that it was the same copy that Darryl had done.

Debra felt her legs weakened, her knees almost buckled in front of Darryl. The man that she had set her eyes on was an amazing person. A master collector had acquired his work and thought it was the real piece.

The crowd's laughter got louder and louder.

"This dude is a joke! It's not enough that he said that it was fake, he had to say that he had written it!"

"I think he did this on purpose to gain Master Max's attention!"

"Yes! He's just asking for attention and trying to show off!"

The comments from the crowd came non-stop, but Darryl laughed. "You think I did this on purpose to gain Max Harrington's attention? You all overthink this. He is underqualified!"

The crowd's expressions darkened. Darryl's words obviously meant that he did not treat Max as equal; he looked down on the man!

No matter who heard it, they would not be able to take it too.

Max could not take it any longer. He sneered as he looked at Darryl. "You said that my collection of the Ping'an Tie is your copy. If that's the case, I'm sure you won't mind showing us on the spot—write another copy!"

His eyes flashed gloomily. 'Shameless person! I will teach you a lesson!'

Then, at his orders, the staff quickly set up a table with a brush, paper, and ink.

At that moment, the crowd started their taunts again.

"Yes! You should not only say it; prove it to us!"

"If you have the skills, then show us!"

"I don't think he would dare to!"

The crowd's eyes were all on him as they looked at him condescendingly and mischievously.

How would he dare to look down on Master Max? He had asked for it!

Darryl chuckled. He said nothing and picked up the brush. He dipped it in ink and waved the huge brush flamboyantly. The Ping'an Tie started to appear on the paper!

There was only total silence!

The entire exhibition hall was in dead silence! Only the sounds of a brush as it painted against the paper could be heard!

The crowd's expression tensed. They were all shocked and started to tremble.

They saw Darryl wrote those words with energy and vigor, yet the writing did not lose its care-freeness! The entire work looked precisely the same as the original Wang Xizhi one!

That person was skilled!

Max was stunned. He looked at Darryl in a dazed and could not say anything for a long while.

Chapter 960

The Ping'an Tie that Darryl produced looked precisely like the one on the wall, be it in terms of artistry or technique! The one he just did even had a higher level of artistry than the one on the wall!

Did he actually write the one on the wall?

How did that seemingly good-for-nothing person have such a great talent in calligraphy?

"You—" After a long time, Max finally snapped back to his senses. At that moment, he sweated profusely. He sized Darryl up and said, "My friend, which family are you from? Why did you attend my exhibition today?"

'This person doesn't seem like an ordinary person! However, he embarrassed me in front of everyone, that is too much! Now the entire Mid City knows that I have fake items in my exhibition!' Max thought.

Max was furious, but he was afraid that Darryl was from an influential family that he could not offend. That was why he asked about his family. Max had invited many affluent families to his exhibition, so many of his guests were quite influential.

Darryl smiled as he held Debra's hand. "Me? My wife and I are here with my sister. She insisted on coming to your exhibition. If she did not bug me, I would not have come here."

Debra blushed when Darryl referred to her as his wife. She took his arm shyly and buried her face in his shoulders.

When Darryl was finished, he scanned his surroundings, but Sara was nowhere to be found. Once she entered the exhibition, she did not follow Darryl, so he did not know where she was.

"You're here with your sister?" Max clenched his fist tightly. His eyes were red when he said, "Leave at once! You are not welcome here!"

Max initially thought that Darryl would say he was from some prominent family, but he said he was there with his sister! Max sneered, he was to offend Darryl anymore. "Leave at once! Just because you wrote a few words, do you think you're a scholar now? I think you're only here to cause a scene! Take your wife and sister and leave at once!"

"You—" Debra was furious. How could he be angry because he was embarrassed? That was the first time someone had chased her away, and she was the Artemis Sect's Sect Master. Debra sighed and whispered into Darryl's

ears, "Let's go then..."

Darryl sighed as well; he felt unhappy too.

"It's so lively here!" Right at that moment, a voice came through as Sara appeared happily. She was at other exhibition stalls to look at some interesting antiques, and she was in a good mood. When she saw many people around Darryl, she was there to have a look.

Sara still had no clue as to what had happened.

"Miss Carter!" When she appeared, Max's eyes brightened. He immediately welcomed her with a smile on his face. "Miss Carter, I'm Max Harrison. It is my honor that you came to my exhibition."

Max had changed from an arrogant person to a polite and respectful man.

He had no choice; the Carters were a prominent family of cultivators. Especially the master of the family, Zoran Carter. He was a powerful and respected man in the martial arts world.

Max, on the other hand, was only a famous collector. He dared not slack off in front of powerful families like the Carters.

That was the Carter family's second daughter?

She was youthful, smart, and pretty!

All eyes were on Sara. They did not even bother to look at Darryl anymore.

Sara nodded at Max. "So, you're Master Max. Your collection is amazing! I just saw a few bronze bells; they are gorgeous!"

"If you like them, I'll give them to you," Max said humbly as he waved and laughed.

Even though the bronze bells cost a fortune, if he could be friends with Sara, it would be all worth it!

"Are you for real?" Sara was exceedingly pleased; stars sparkled in her eyes.

"Yes!" Max nodded fervently. He turned his head and instructed, "Come, give the bronze bell to Miss Sara Carter!"

"Yes!" A few young men in suits suddenly walked toward him and nodded.

Max laughed as he continued to say, "Right, by the way, I have a favor to ask of you, Miss Carter. I heard that your godbrother, Darryl Darby, always appears in the Carter mansion. If there's a chance one day, perhaps you can introduce me to him?"

Darryl and the six sects had gathered in Donghai City to fend off the New World

Army. He had become the World Universe's hero, and the people revered him.

Even though Max was not part of the martial arts world, he had a deep admiration for Darryl.

Besides an exhibition in Mid City, the most important thing that Max wanted to do was to meet Darryl. He wanted to see his idol and hero in person.

Gasp!

At the mention of Darryl Darby, the crowd was in a heated discussion.

Darryl Darby was the World Universe's hero and the Elysium Gate's Sect Master. One could spend three days and three nights to talk about his heroic adventures and still would not be able to finish it. Everyone would want to meet him.

Angela was a little excited, as well. Even though she was a celebrity, she had heard the famous Darryl Darby's heroic stories. The man had valiantly fought off and defended against several hundred thousand men from the New World Army!

"You want to meet my brother?" Sara said as she looked at Max.

Sara scanned her surroundings before she noticed Darryl. She thought, 'Master Max is an interesting person. Darryl is clearly standing there, why does he still want me to introduce them?'

Chapter 961

"Miss Carter, I would be eternally grateful if you could bring me to see Master Darby!" Max excitedly said.

"Haha!"

Darryl at the side was laughing at his words. Was his name so famous now?

Hearing Darryl laugh, Max frowned and yelled, "Why haven't you left yet?!"

Darryl was showing off his calligraphy just moments ago which annoyed Max who just wanted Darryl to leave. Max was about to take the walkie-talkie and call for security to escort Darryl out.

At the same moment, Sara was looking lividly at Max and reprimanded, "I brought my brother here! What right do you have to chase him off!"

Sara admired Darryl the most and would not take it when others disrespected him, so she was suddenly enraged. Even if the person was the famous Max Harrington, she would not allow it!

'What? Sara referred to that person as her brother?'

Everyone was instantly baffled.

'C-could this person be Darryl Darby?' Everyone in the World Universe knew that Sara's brother was Darryl Darby!

Max's jaw dropped with his bewildered expression. His eyes were filled with disbelief.

Meanwhile, Darryl was as calm as still waters.

Sara then walked toward Darryl and adoringly hugged his arm before looking at Max, "He's my godbrother, Darryl Darby. Don't you want to see him so badly? Why are you chasing him away?"

"I..." Max's forehead was sweating profusely. He quickly walked over with an expression of fear and apologetically said, "Mister Darby. Master Darby, I'm s-so sorry to have offended you. I must be blind. I hope you don't mind me..."

At that moment, Max was anxious to death and on the brink of tears!

What did he just do? He was about to chase away his hero, Darryl Darby?!

Darryl smiled ambiguously at him without saying anything.

Everyone was bewildered at that scene.

'Darryl Darby! It's really him!'

"Mister Darby, please forgive my rudeness." Max bowed a little in apology. "You must allow me to find a good place and treat you to good alcohol and food as an apology, please."

When he said that, Max was filled with fear yet full of hope at the same time.

Darryl smiled dubiously, "Master Max, I thought you wanted me to f*ck off just now? Now you want to treat me to a meal? You sure change your attitude faster than flipping a page of a book."

"Uh..." Max was sweating profusely on his forehead and was almost in tears. "Mister Darby, I was wrong. I hope you can forgive me."

Darryl stopped teasing him upon seeing his pretty sincere attitude. However, he shook his head. "I appreciate the gesture but let's forget about the meal. By the way, rub your eyes and look clearly next time before you collect any precious antiques."

"Y-yes, I'll remember your teachings." Max nodded furiously and dared not retort.

The entire crowd was silent and stunned at the scene in front of them.

Max Harrington was a person of high status but was behaving like a child in front of Darryl Darby. This scene was just too shocking.

However, no one dared to say anything.

In the end, the person before Max was the entire World Universe's hero, Darryl Darby.

Darryl did not bother to say anything further as he smiled at Sara and Debra. "Let's go. We should head home too."

He turned around and headed downstairs upon saying that.

Chapter 962

Debra and Sara followed suit while Max stood there tense. He was stunned and remorseful when Darryl left. How could he ruin such a rare opportunity to meet with his hero?

He felt like slapping himself with that thought in mind.

Debra tilted her head while looking at Darryl once they were outside and gently laughed, "I didn't expect that you would be so famous here in the World Universe."

Debra noticed the admiration in the crowd's eyes as they looked at Darryl. She felt extremely happy and blissful that her man was so amazing.

Darryl chuckled and before he could say anything, Sara said, "Of course! Darryl is everyone's idol here in the World Universe. He has countless fangirls in love with him!"

Idol? Darryl laughed out loud at that word and could not help but ruffled Sara's head. "You're such a sweet talker."

Sara giggled, stuck her tongue out, and was being inexplicably cute.

"Mister Darryl!"

As they were laughing, an anxious voice came from behind.

Darryl turned around and was stunned as a petite figure came chasing after them from the exhibition's entrance. This woman was wearing high heels, denim jeans, and a white shirt—looking extremely sexy. It was Angela Angel.

"Why did she chase after us?" Darryl muttered in his heart.

"Ah!"

"Angela Angel, I love you!"

The surrounding fans suddenly screamed when Angela appeared and was about to surround her, but the security guards blocked them.

Angela approached Darryl in her high heels and seemed nervous. She bit her lip before gently saying with her trembling voice, "Mister Darryl, please stay where you are."

It was true that she had admired Darryl for a long time. Even though she herself was a celebrity and had met many amazing men, yet how could any of those men be compared to Darryl—a person who saved the entire mainland?

At that instant, Angela excitedly looked at Darryl as though a fan had finally met

her idol with her uncontrollable fast heartbeat.

"Miss Angel, how may I help you?" Darryl smiled and asked Angela.

"I..." Angela bit her lip and did not dare to look directly into Darryl's eyes. She softly said, "Your name has spread far and wide when Mister Darryl and the other sects defended Donghai city against the New World Army—making you very respectable. I wish to be your friend and perhaps we could exchange numbers? I hope you don't mind." Angela's eyes were filled with anxiety as she spoke.

'Ah, so it's about this.' Darryl laughed while looking at her before exchanging phone numbers with her.

Angela was inexplicably excited after saving Darryl's phone number in her cellphone. Were it not for the crowd watching her, she really wanted to hug her idol.

"I won't disturb you any further then, we'll see each other soon!" Angela said softly as she happily returned to the exhibition.

...

The other side of Donghai City!

Samantha sat on the sofa with her reddened eyes and gloomy expression.

Lily was also frowning opposite her and feeling helpless.

"What should we do? Our family is short of a hundred million and they want us to find the money. Where do we get a hundred million in such a short time?" At that moment, Samantha could not help but harrumph furiously. "You previously did so much for the family. It's one thing to be ungrateful and they still want to force us into desperation!"

They still had not collected the money after a day.

Did they really have to sell off the mansion?

Samantha and Lily would be homeless were they to sell off the mansion. However, Granny Lyndon would sue Lily's father if they could not fork out the money.

It was no small sum! Where could they get so much money from?

Chapter 963

"Mom, don't panic. I'll find a way and obtain the money," said Lily gently as she bit her lips.

"How? How are you going to obtain the money?" Samantha was extremely anxious. "It's close to a hundred million! Previously, you could earn from live-streaming but you haven't done it in a year! Furthermore, your face..."

As Samantha said that, she noticed Lily's extremely darkened expression and immediately realized her slip of the tongue before shutting up.

She knew she had triggered something painful in her daughter.

Lily did not mind all these as her mind was in a mess at that moment. She was adamant to not sell the mansion. However, even if she were to borrow from someone, no one would borrow her the money since it was close to 100 million after all!

"Yes!" Lily clapped her hands and quickly headed to her bedroom. She took out an exquisite box from her closet.

The gold-plated box looked luxurious and within it was a pair of crystal shoes. It was the Worship of Crystal!

"Lily, are you planning to sell this pair of shoes?" Samantha could not help but let out a sigh with her pity-filled eyes. "This is your most favorite pair of shoes!"

Up until now, Samantha still did not know that Darryl was the one who gave Lily this Worship of Crystal shoes. She only knew that Lily had carefully kept it and was unwilling to wear it.

Lily bit her lip and stared at the Worship of Crystal before she gently said, "Mom, don't worry."

Truth be told, Lily was very unwilling to sell the pair of shoes because every time she saw them she would think about Darryl. How he used to protect her, take great care of her, and about every single moment she spent with Darryl.

She was extremely unwilling to sell it off, but had no choice!

...

On the other side, Carter Mansion.

Darryl, Debra, and Sara just came back from the exhibition.

Once they entered the courtyard, a maidservant quickly approached them and excitedly exclaimed, "Jewel is awake!"

'She is?!' Darryl was elated and suddenly quickened his steps to head toward Jewel's resting place.

"Jewel has awakened! That's great!" Sara quickly followed along and was overjoyed as well.

Even though she had not spent much time with Jewel, they were alike in character—both were adorable and smart. Sara treated Jewel like her own younger sister.

"Woo!" Debra let out a sigh of relief. Her eyes were brimming with hope while being relieved at the same time.

The perpetrator's identity would come to light once Jewel woke up. Until this day, Debra still believed that she had not seen wrongly on that night. The person that harmed Jewel was none other than Yvonne Young.

She quickened her steps and followed suit as well with that thought in mind.

The moment they arrived at the room, Jewel was lying in bed in good spirit but her face was still a little pale.

"Jewel!" Darryl excitedly walked over and sat beside her bed before tightly holding Jewel's hand. "You're finally awake!"

Darryl had not slept well for the past few days from being worried sick for Jewel.

Jewel forced a smile and feebly said, "Mister, I thought I'd died and won't be able to serve you in the future!"

'Silly girl. She's so badly injured, yet still thinks about serving me.' Darryl was heartbroken and touched at the same time before patting her head. "Don't say such silly things. It's my fault that I didn't protect you. Don't worry. I won't allow you to be hurt anymore."

Darryl then let out a sigh of relief before seriously saying, "That's right. Jewel, who's the person who hit you the other day? Is it a stranger or someone you know?"

Chapter 964

At Darryl's question, Debra looked at Jewel in concern with her clear and bright eyes filled with anxiety.

Sara who was beside also said, "Jewel, quick tell us. Who dares to hurt you? Darryl won't let them off."

"Hmm..." Jewel lightly bit her lip when facing the three of them. She contemplated a little in her heart before softly said, "It's too dark that night. I-I... didn't get a good look at the person."

Jewel was very conflicted inside as she said that and did not dare look at Darryl. She of course knew that it was Yvonne Young who hurt her that night but could not bear to tell Darryl.

Jewel did not know why Yvonne would hurt her. She only knew that Darryl and Yvonne had a very close relationship. She was afraid it would affect their relationship if she told the truth.

She also believed the person that Darryl liked must be kind-hearted. There must be a reason behind for Yvonne to hurt her, so Jewel decided not to tell the truth, but to personally ask Yvonne herself.

'She didn't see who it was?' Darryl frowned. He did not give it much thought but only sighed and gently comforted Jewel. "It's fine if you did not see who it was. I'll protect you from now on and won't let you get hurt anymore."

At that, Darryl hugged Jewel.

Debra, by the side, shuddered. Her face was full of surprise.

'Jewel didn't see who's the perpetrator?' Debra firmly believed it was Yvonne Young from the start. However, Darryl did not believe that it was her. Now that Jewel claimed she did not see who her attacker was, Darryl would be even more convinced it was not Yvonne.

At that moment, Jewel scanned her surroundings and gently asked, "Mister, Where's Yvonne?"

Darryl laughed, "I sent her back to the Young Mansion for two days. She has left her home for a year after all."

"Woo!" Jewel let out a sigh of relief at his words and nodded slightly.

She would properly question Yvonne as to why she would attack her if the opportunity arises. As she thought about that, Jewel was secretly worried.

What if Yvonne attacked her again when they were alone together?

Debra noticed each of Jewel's expression changes.

"Jewel, what do you feel like eating? I'll get them to prepare for you." Darryl lovingly held onto Jewel's hand.

'Jewel must be hungry from being unconscious for so many days.'

Jewel thought for a while before replying, "I feel like having porridge."

Darryl quickly stood up. "I'll get them to immediately make it for you."

He quickly left the room as he said that.

"Wait for me!" Sara yelled and chased after him. These days, Sara would follow suit wherever Darryl went.

Suddenly, it was Debra and Jewel left in the room.

"Woo..." Debra sat by the bed and slowly said after a long while, "Jewel, did you really not see the perpetrator's face? Tell me the truth."

"Debra..." Jewel was slightly stunned and began to stutter, "I-I..."

Debra lightly held onto Jewel's hand and continued, "You actually do know, right? You just don't feel like telling Darryl. Why aren't you telling him?"

Jewel bit her lip hard before smiling kindly and said, "It's Yvonne who hit me. I didn't tell Mister because I'm afraid it might affect their relationship. You know as well that they have been separated for such a long time. It's so hard for them to finally meet again... There must be a reason why Yvonne attacked me..."

"Sigh!" Debra lightly sighed at those words.

Jewel was so kind that her heart started aching. 1

Chapter 965

Meanwhile, Darryl walked out of the room and instructed two maidservants to prepare food for Jewel.

"Brother Darryl." Nimbus Dixon approached him from a distance at that moment.

Due to Darryl's relationship with the Carters, Elysium Gate members did not need to report when they entered the Carter Mansion.

Nimbus took an invitation card and respectfully handed it to Darryl when he was right in front of Darryl. "Brother Darryl, this is an invitation from Shaolin, Wudang, and the Five Sects who are preparing to hold a martial arts conference."

'Martial arts conference?' Darryl accepted the invitation card. He could not help but frown and muttered.

Nimbus continued, "I hear that all sects will be attending this martial arts conference. By the way, Flower Mountain and the Eternal Life Palace Sect have also received the invitations."

'Dax and Chester are invited too? Let's go have a look then.' Darryl thought before nodding and replied, "Right. I got it." 4

...

Lily's mansion in Donghai City.

Lily was sitting in the living hall and looking gloomy while hugging an empty box.

She had just sold the Worship of Crystal for 100 million at Roger's Auction.

Roger's Auction was a famous auction in Donghai City where Darryl previously met Zion and Evelyn Featherstone.

Lily felt empty inside and inexplicably upset after selling off the Worship of Crystal.

"Lily, have you readied the money?" A man then walked into the hall with a sneer on his face at that moment. It was William Lyndon.

William sat self-invitingly on the sofa in a disrespectful manner when he approached Lily.

Lily replied coldly, "Yes, I've just transferred to the family's account. You can check for yourself."

'So fast?' William frowned before calling someone.

Once he confirmed that the money had been transferred through, he sized up Lily

in surprise before jeered and said, "Well done, Lily. Oh my, aren't you rich. You could get a hundred million in just three days. It seems like we've underestimated you."

He then scanned the house and asked, "Did you sell off the mansion?"

Lily did not bother to talk to him. "You can leave now since I've given you the money."

She was extremely disappointed after selling off her precious Worship of Crystal.

Samantha came out of her room at the moment upon hearing the commotion before pointing at William and yelling, "William Lyndon, you really hoped for us to sell off the mansion? Let me tell you this, we refuse to be homeless! Lily sold off the Worship of Crystal and paid you the money so you can leave. We won't have any further relations with the Lyndons from now on!"

'What? A pair of Worship of Crystal could sell for a hundred million?' William was stunned at those words. 'A pair of stupid shoes could fetch for so much? Looks like Lily has more good stuff with her.'

His eyes sparkled with that thought in mind and sneered, "Don't think we're done with you. We're seriously lacking in capital and a hundred million is far from enough. You have to give us another fifty million."

Granny Lyndon was getting older. Sooner or later her estate would be passed on to William. He would be even happier the more money their family gets, so he had to violently extort this mother and daughter pair.

'What? Another fifty million?' Lily trembled and looked at William before coldly said, "On what account? We've previously agreed on a hundred million!"

Samantha could not take it any longer as well and yelled at William, "You're reneging back on your words! Do you still have any humanity? Are you trying to drive both of us to destitution? Has your guilty conscience been eaten by dogs?"

"Humanity? You dare mention about humanity to me?"

Chapter 966

William slowly stood up and flatly said, "Previously, when Lily's father scammed their family of a few billion, did we ask you to return? We are only asking for one hundred and fifty million now yet you complain that we're inhumane?"

At that moment, William's expression was extremely cold. "I'll tell you this, you better pass us the money tomorrow or I'm going to find someone to mortgage this house. Just prepare for Lily's father to end up in jail if you don't obey."

William turned and left once he said that.

"You..." Lily was livid and wanted to argue back but William had gone away.

"How barbaric! How are we going to survive..."

Samantha was trembling in anger as she sat there with her tears started falling.

...

The next day, the Hexad School in Donghai City.

Donghai City was in an unprecedented crisis a year ago when the New World Army attacked. However, thanks to huge resistance and defense from each sect, Donghai City was saved such that the Hexad School was not even affected by the battle.

It was the weekend at that moment with students having their breaks. However, the Hexad School hall was surprisingly lively.

For the past two days, important news was spread throughout the entire martial arts community with Wudang and Shaolin being the leaders of the Five Sects who were planning to hold a martial arts conference in the Hexad School.

Ever since the New World Army attacked, the Five Sects have learned their lesson.

Donghai City had almost fallen into the enemy's hands because there was no unity among the sects and no unified command. Therefore, the Five Sects were prepared to force alliances and invited all the other sects as only by being united could they prepare for the next attack from the New World.

Most of the sect was already there when Darryl and his sworn brothers rushed to the hall.

In the middle of the hall, a huge stage was erected with dozens of seats that only sect masters were qualified to be seated there.

It could be seen that many sect masters like the Wudang Sect's Master Leonard,

Shaolin's Master Reed, Emei's Aurora Hansen, the Beggars Sect Master, Iron Palms, Giant Whales, and Shiv Sect were already seated there for some time.

Below the stage, thousands of people were seated in a sea of black with each of them being their sect's elites. It was an impressive view.

The other sect masters on stage stood up, smiled, and greeted them when Darry, Dax, and Chester entered the hall.

"Master Darby, I hope you're fine."

"We haven't seen each other in a year and you're still looking as spirited as ever."

Previously at the Wishing Star Tower, Darryl showed great righteousness when they fought against the New World Army. His courage and willingness to sacrifice himself made the other sects deeply admire him.

All of them were of course smiling toward Darryl at that moment.

Aurora Hansen sat there with her icy-cold face and did not even bother to stand up while looking at Darryl with utter animosity!

A year ago, she pushed Darryl into the volcano crater and was sure that he was dead.

However, she had not expected that not only did he not die, but his powers had increased substantially. He immediately saved the Carter family from a catastrophe when he returned to the World Universe.

She could not hold back the anger in her heart at the thought of how her junior sister—Mother Abbess Serendipity—died by Darryl's hands!

However, today was the martial arts conference which had to do with the World Universe's security so Aurora could not get angry and had to bear with it.

Darryl smiled and exchanged greetings with the various sect masters before going up on stage and sat in his seat.

Dax and Chester were both sitting next to him.

The three sworn brothers were from the leaves of the same tree, so they naturally were arranged to be seated together.

Suddenly, Darryl felt the cold glares from Aurora as they locked eyes with each other.

'Level One Martial Emperor?' Darryl was stunned. The last time he saw Aurora, she was still at the level of a Martial Saint. In the short span of a year, she managed to climb up and became a Martial Emperor?

Darryl was not the only person looking at Aurora. Most men there had their eyes

on her whether subconsciously or otherwise. The Emei Sect Master, Aurora was always fond of wearing long dresses. However, she was in deep blue denim jeans and a fitted shirt on that day.

It had to be said that she looked extremely sexy.

However, Darryl had zero interest in her except for being seethed with loathing! She pushed him into the volcano crater a year ago and almost caused him to lose his life!

Darryl looked at her with a smile and said, "Master Hansen, I haven't seen you for a year. Are you changing your image and starting to go the sexy route?"

Chapter 967

Gasp!

The crowd was in an uproar at his words. Only Darryl in the entire World Universe would dare to taunt the Emei Sect Master!

Aurora's pretty face was cold as ice. She harrumphed before ignoring him, but her heart was seething with rage.

'Just because he's a hero now, he dares to be so rude to me!'

"Darryl Darby!" At this moment, Jean Xander stood up among the Emei disciples. She looked at Darryl and yelled, "Darryl, how dare you say such words to our master?"

Their sect master was pure, chaste, and was respected by all. Darryl's frivolous words could only be seen as taunts trampling on the Emei's pride and dignity.

"Hehe." Darryl laughed lightly before glancing at Jean and said, "I'm talking to your master. What rights do you have to interrupt us? Don't you know your place?" Darryl loathed the entire sect, so his words to them were harsh.

"You..." Jean stomped her feet and could not find words to retort.

Darryl was right. He was the Elysium Gate Sect Master and on the same level as Aurora Hansen. A sect disciple had no right to interrupt them.

"Jean Xander is it?" Darryl glared icily at her before taking a step forward and coldly said, "Your sect master pushed me into a volcano crater one year ago in the New World. You stab me as well at that time. Don't think I've forgotten about this? I've yet to pay you back!"

Woo!

A terribly violent force of power was released from Darryl's body as he said that.

"Alright, alright. Settle down." The Xiaoyao Sect Master—Naomi Grand—quickly stood up to soothe the situation at that moment upon seeing how the mood in the hall was going awry. "We're comrades of the martial arts world so let's all speak less."

Naomi smiled and scanned the surroundings upon saying that. With a clear and booming voice, she then said, "People, let's get straight into it since everyone has arrived."

The entire hall was silent when Naomi talked with everyone's eyes on her.

"My fellow heroes, I'm sure all of you know this martial arts conference's

purpose." Naomi scanned the surroundings and slowly said, "A year ago, the New World Army attacked us and although each of us resisted with our full force, we almost lost. Why is that? Is it because the people of the World Universe are weak? That's most definitely not the reason."

Her expressions turned serious as she said, "It's because each sect did not work together so our objective today is to form an alliance and nominate an Alliance Master. All of us will then have to obey the Alliance Master's commands so we'll be united if and when we face another attack."

The fellow sect masters nodded in agreement upon hearing her words.

She was right. The martial arts community in the World Universe will be like a family once they have elected an Alliance Master. If the sects of the World Universe could unite and form an alliance, they would not need to be afraid of the New World anymore. That was good news.

Naomi smiled and continued, "The Alliance Master elected has to not only be powerful but also have to have integrity and talent at the same time. Everyone here can voice out if you have the perfect nominee in your heart."

Gasp!

The entire crowd was in a heated discussion at her words.

"There's no need for further discussions. It should be our Shaolin Sect Master Endless of course!"

"Our Wudang Sect Master is a respectable person of the martial arts world. He should definitely be the Alliance Master!"

Instantly, every disciple was yelling and nominating their own sect masters.

The Alliance Master position was of huge honor and they would naturally not want people from other sects to be elected.

"Everyone, please be quiet." At that moment, one person stood up among the group of sect masters on stage and loudly said, "Whether it's Wudang or Shaolin, nothing can be comparable to Elysium Gate Sect Master Darryl Darby in my eyes! Darryl is young and has integrity and talent. The Alliance Master position should unquestionably go to him!"

The person who said that was none other than the Iron Palms Sect Master, Douglas Jensen.

Chapter 968

Although Iron Palms were not as famous as Wudang or Shaolin, they had a certain status in the martial arts world. Douglas Jensen was the sect master whose specialized technique, Iron Palm was said to be extremely powerful such that he could smash rocks into pieces.

Gasp!

The crowd was instantly uproared from his words.

The surrounding sect masters on stage were looking at Darryl with a complicated expression.

Truth be told, although Darryl was deeply respected by his comrades from the martial arts world during the Wishing Star Tower battle a year ago, he was lagging far behind other sect masters like the Wudang in terms of experience in the martial arts world.

Not only the Wudang Sect Master but the long famous Shaolin Sect Master Endless was also Darryl's predecessor.

"Master Jensen, your words are quite inappropriate."

"Yes. Although Master Darby is powerful and strong, he has insufficient experience. How could he take on such an important role as the Alliance Master?"

"Stop joking."

The next second, the surrounding people started expressing their opinions.

'F*ck! Someone nominated me?' Darryl laughed and looked at Douglas before saying, "Master Jensen, you overpraised me. I'm a junior when compared to the other sect masters. How could I take on such an important role?"

Darryl's expression was humble when he said that.

Dax who was beside him could not help but teased Darryl, "Darryl, someone is nominating you. Why are you being humble?"

"Master Darby you're too humble."

At this moment, Douglas smiled politely at Darryl before saying, "Master Darby already founded the Elysium Gate at such a young age on top of spreading righteousness and rid the world of evil everywhere with his name known far and wide. Might I ask the other sect masters, who else among you have done this?"

The entire crowd was silent upon his words as suddenly no one could retort his words.

The sect masters were inconvenient to speak on their behalf.

A few seconds later, one of the Wudang disciples stood up and said, "Although the Elysium Gate spreads righteousness and rid the world of evil, every other sect is also doing this to create a better martial arts community! Shouldn't this be a given as practitioners of martial arts? It's natural for us to improve the martial arts world without being asked!"

"Yes! Making Master Darby the Alliance Master based on this is a little too much!"

"Master Jensen, it's fine that you admire Master Darby, but please don't force your opinions onto others. This whole ordeal seems a little forced!"

The disciples did not mean to look down on Darryl when saying these but just factually pointed it out, hence Darryl would of course not mind them.

However, Douglas smiled before scanning his surroundings and slowly said, "Alright. Even if this is just something normal, how about founding a sect? Based on this, Master Darby is way ahead of the other sect masters. In other words, Master Darby is a founding sect master. Although the sect masters of Wudang and Shaolin are highly respectable, they could only barely catch up with him. There's no competition in this aspect."

Douglas got more excited as he talked before continuing "If everyone is still unconvinced, I have a few more reasons as to why I support Master Darby!

"Although the Wudang Sect Master is a highly respectable martial arts person, his character and temperament are a little too easy-going from practicing Taoism. Therefore, he's a little less aggressive when compared to Darryl.

"Shaolin Sect Master Endless is indeed wise and far-sighted, but would not fare well in terms of energy and spirit from his old age when being compared to Darryl.

"As for Emei's Master—Hansen—although she's a rare one-in-a-hundred-years female heroine in the martial arts world, she still lacks a little in terms of boldness if compared to Darryl."

"Also, Xiaoyao Sect Master..."

Suddenly, Douglas listed out all the great sect masters' disadvantages in comparison to Darryl. They were disparaged to the point they could not even catch up with Darryl.

At that moment, the fellow sect masters' expressions darkened. Especially their disciples who were extremely displeased.

Was he joking?

Even if Darryl was excellent, he should not brag about him in such a way that as

though Darryl was the sole hero of the World Universe while the other sects were useless trash.

Chapter 969

At first, Darryl was slightly embarrassed from listening to Douglas's praises.

However, as the praises gradually became more and more outrageous, Darryl could not help but secretly frowned.

Something was not right!

Darryl was not even familiar with Douglas Jensen, so why was Douglas praising and putting him high up on the pedestal while deprecating the others?

Dax who was beside Darryl had not realized what was happening and could not help but laughed. "Darryl, Douglas admires you way too much! Look at how much he's praising you?"

Dax, at that moment, did you think much. He only knew that if someone were to praise his brothers, he would be happy.

"What admiration?" Chester closed his eyes and interrupted Dax's words before heavily saying, "Darryl, I think something is going on with Douglas Jensen. He's trying to stir up troubles by fanning the flames."

Chester had always been calm and steady in his work and just like Darryl at first, he did not think much of it. However, he immediately understood Douglas's intentions when Douglas started to exaggerate. Douglas might seem to admire Darryl at first glance, but he was stirring up conflicts between Darryl and the other sects.

It was like hiding a needle hidden in a pile of cotton—a sinister move behind an innocent facade!

Darryl kept his smile and nodded in agreement upon hearing Chester's words.

At that moment, Douglas was still praising Darryl and made it seem as though Darryl was an extremely rare, unparalleled, and incomparable person.

"Douglas Jensen, shut up!" Finally, Emei's Abbess Mother Benevolence could not take it anymore before standing up and reprimanded, "What you mean is that other sect masters here are only as good as a ten-thousandth of Darryl? That the Alliance Master position undoubtedly can only be his? Are these your own words or did Darryl buy you off privately and make you say this on purpose?"

She glared at Darryl coldly as she said this.

Abbess Mother Serendipity was her senior sister, and the entire Emei knew at that moment that Darryl killed her. As her junior sister, she would naturally not mince her words or be polite when facing Darryl!

As she said that, the surrounding people returned to their senses and yelled out loud.

"Yes! Douglas has been bragging about how great Darryl is. There must be some unknown reason behind it!"

"Abbess Mother Benevolence is right! It must be Darryl who instructed him to say all these!"

"Hehe, Darryl sure is interesting! He pretends to be humble on the surface but secretly engages in such dirty tactics. So this is the Elysium Gate Sect Master..."

Instantly, all the fires were aimed at Darryl.

Douglas yelled out loud upon hearing their reprimands, "I'm just telling the truth. All of you are just jealous of Master Darby as your sects are worthless when compared to Master Darby! The Alliance Master position is undoubtedly his!"

Douglas's eyes flashed a little mischievously as he said that.

It was true that Douglas's act of bragging about Darryl was to try and stir conflict between the Elysium Gate and the other sects.

The Iron Palms had secretly defected to the New World a year ago and the New World Royals had given Douglas a mission—finding an opportunity to stir up conflicts between the World Universe's sects.

The martial arts conference on that day was a great opportunity.

At this moment, Douglas was extremely delighted when the crowd was pointing fingers at Darryl.

'Haha! My work didn't go to waste.'

At that moment, the voices of dissatisfaction toward Darryl got louder and louder as everyone was dissatisfied with Darryl. Even the sect masters on stage were frowning with unhappy expressions.

'F*ck.' Darryl was suppressing his anger too from witnessing that scene. Why was he being blamed when he didn't even do anything?

"Alright, everybody please be quiet!"

Chapter 970

At this moment, Naomi Grand stood up and scanned the surroundings before her clear and crisp voice rang through. Her voice was not loud, but it spread through the entire hall such that everyone could hear her.

The entire hall was instantly silent.

At this moment, Naomi looked at Darryl quietly and coldly said, "Darryl, why don't you show us your leadership skills since Master Jensen admires you so much? Let's do it like this. How about we select a few dozen disciples from each sect and have a competition led by the sect master himself? Let's see if the other sects are better or your Elysium Gate is better."

She could barely hide the displeasure in her when she said that.

Truth be told, Naomi always had a good impression of Darryl. However, Naomi felt that this was a dirty trick by Darryl when Douglas disparaged the other sect to be worthless while praising and bragging about Darryl. Her impression of him instantly dropped drastically.

"I..." Darryl did not know whether to laugh or cry at those words.

'F*ck, what the hell is this? For whatever reason, I've become everyone's target?' He subconsciously looked toward Douglas as that thought crossed Darryl's mind. Douglas had already taken his seat and hugged himself with his eyes closed in a resting position as though the whole incident was unrelated to him.

At that moment, Wudang, Shaolin, and Tianshan sect masters nodded in agreement at Naomi's suggestion.

"Let's have a competition since Master Grand has already spoken her mind."

"Master Darby, I'm sure you won't be afraid to rise for the challenge?"

The sect masters strongly suppressed their anger as they spoke.

At that moment, all of them were under the impression that Darryl had secretly instructed Douglas to praise him. Anyone would not be able to take it well when they were being belittled to almost nothing, especially when they were sect masters of their respective sects after all.

Darryl was almost at a loss for words from seeing the unfolding situation. He would still be wronged no matter how he explained himself. He felt being forced to do something he did not want but still had to accomplish regardless of his opinions.

"Sigh!" Darryl sighed and said, "What are we competing at and what are the

rules?"

"Let's have an offensive and defensive battle," said Naomi, "there'll be two teams against each other—namely the offense and defense team with the offense team having an extra ten members on their team. If the offensive team can break through the defense team's formation within ten minutes, it signals the offense team's victory and vice versa."

"Xiaoyao will go first and we shall compete against the Elysium Gate!" Naomi walked over and looked at Darryl before saying, "Darryl, offense or defense? Take your pick!"

Darryl scratched his head and flatly said, "I'll pick defense."

In Darryl's heart, he did not wish to get into too much trouble with these sects.

However, he chose the passive side since they have already decided to compete against one another.

As he said that, Darryl instructed thirty Elysium Gate disciples to deploy a defensive formation.

"Alright!" Naomi nodded and did not bother to say any further. She lifted her hand and twenty Xiaoyao disciples immediately stood up and launched their attacks.

Although the battle was on a small scale with both teams having just a few members, it was still fierce nonetheless!

The Xiaoyao disciples kept on charging with assorted weapons and techniques while flying all over.

Darryl's defense team on the other hand was very passive, yet unafraid.

For the past year, Darryl had mastered and familiarized himself with the Bai Qi Formations to the point of perfection. At that moment, the Xiaoyao sect could not even break through his defensive formation!

Chapter 971

10 minutes soon passed by in a flash.

The Elysium Gate's defense was stronger than ever and Xiaoyao still could not break through no matter how they tried!

It was obvious that the Xiaoyao Sect had lost by a landslide!

At that moment, Naomi bit her lip while unwillingly looking at Darryl and said, "Xiaoyao has lost this round. Master Darby does have good leadership skills."

Even though she was a woman, she was very willing to admit her loss.

'What? The Elysium Gate won so easily?'

The crowd was instantly shocked.

At that moment, Darryl smiled bitterly and nodded at Naomi before scanning the surroundings and said, "Which sect master would like to have a go?"

Might as well continue since they have already started it. Darryl was already there so he might as well continue with the competition.

At those words, the sect masters were looking at each other before the Tianshan Sect Master finally stood up and said, "I'll give it a try."

He was preparing to select his disciples after saying that.

"Master Darby is indeed a talented commander and general!"

Right at that moment, Douglas said out loud in a sycophantic and admiration tone, "I think all of you should stop competing. I'm afraid even if all of you were to charge together with your disciples, you might not even be a match for Darryl."

As he said that, Douglas looked at Darryl in a flattering way and said, "Am I right, Master Darby?"

'F*ck. This person is trying to fan the flames again.' Darryl's expression darkened but was unable to react in front of so many people. Douglas was praising him after all and his reputation might be ruined if word got out that he reprimanded Douglas.

However, Dax did not bother about these as Chester had told him a while back about how Douglas was creating problems for Daryl. Dax slammed the table hard at that moment when he heard of Douglas continuously flattering Darryl and said, "F*ck you, Douglas Jensen. Shut the f*ck up. It's not for you to direct them how they want to compete as it's up to them. The other sects have been around for thousands of years, why would call them worthless? It's fine if you praise Darryl,

but don't stir up troubles between the sects! I'll chop you off if you further say another word!"

Douglas shrunk back and did not dare to look Darryl's eyes.

The Tianshan Sect Master leaped and stood right in front of Darryl below the stage before sneering, "Master Darby, Douglas said that you won't be afraid even if all the sect's disciples attacked you at once?"

As he said that, he gritted his teeth and scanned his surroundings. "My fellow sect masters, let's charge in together if that's the case! Let's see what we can learn from Master Darby! See how skilled he is in defensive formations!"

As he said that, the other sect master's displeasure-filled eyes landed on Darryl.

Wudang Sect Master sighed and slowly walked over. "In that case, Wudang will join in!"

"Mountain Peak as well!"

"Shaolin has to witness his formation talents as well..."

Suddenly, almost all of the sect masters stood up and expressed their opinions.

Darryl was a little too arrogant in their eyes.

Each sect masters had already selected their disciples when they said those words. In that instant, there were close to a few thousand people when adding up all the participating sects who were facing Darryl and his mere few dozen disciples.

The disparity between a few thousand versus a few dozen teams was huge.

Some sects did not join in of course—such as the Emei Sect.

Aurora Hansen was cold and prideful. She felt that joining in with the other sects and charging against the Elysium Gate would ruin Emei Sect's reputation.

Although Aurora was very unhappy with Darryl, she does not believe that he could handle such a huge number of people. Therefore, it did not matter whether Emei Sect joined in or not.

Darryl would lose!

"I..."

Chapter 972

Darryl did not know whether to laugh or cry when faced with a few thousand people. He really wanted to explain that any of those words did not represent his actual thoughts and it was Douglas Jensen who was stirring up trouble by fanning the flames.

However, Darryl also knew it would be pointless to explain at this stage as the sect masters have long deemed Douglas as one of Darryl's men.

Dax and Chester looked at each other and were both extremely anxious at the scene.

"This is inappropriate!" Chester could not help but yell, "the rules stated that one team against another, but now all of you are ganging up. Don't you think it's against the rules?"

At his words, Dax followed suit and yelled, "Yes! If you want to play in this way, the Flower Mountain and Eternal Life Palace will join in the fight as well. We'll be helping Darryl!"

Douglas's face turned bitter as he pretentiously yelled, "Master Wilson, it seems like you're blaming me for hurting Master Darby from your words. I've great confidence in him, okay? As his sworn brothers, shouldn't you have some faith in him?"

"F*ck you!" Dax pointed at Douglas and yelled. He then scanned the surroundings. "All of you are fools! Our three brothers have no interest whatsoever in the Alliance Master position. Darryl and Chester, let's go."

"Dax!"

Darryl took a deep breath and bitterly said, "I have to give it a try since the sect masters want to compete."

Darryl initially did not want to become some Alliance Master. However, he just gave it some thoughts and realized the Alliance Master position was extremely crucial. It would of course be fine if a hero got it. However, what would happen to the World Universe if one of the New World b*tches became the Alliance Master?

Darryl then contemplated and decided that he should be the Alliance Master!

At that moment, everyone was shocked!

Darryl really dared to take up the challenge! How bold of him!

The sects like Wudang and Shaolin did not bother to say any further.

"Wudang disciples, attack!"

"Shaolin disciples, charge!"

"Tianshan disciples..."

Instantly, several dozen sect's disciples charged at Darryl like a wave at each sect master's orders.

It was several thousand people against several dozens! Such a shocking scene!

Darryl smiled when looking at the few thousand people charging over.

The next second, he gave instructions to his several dozen disciples behind him. "Four of you take five steps toward the South-East. The few of you should take two steps back toward the North-West. As for the rest, move three steps toward the center!"

Darryl was not in a rush when he said that and even seemed rather laid back.

The several dozen Elysium Gate disciples quickly changed their positions following his instructions.

"Hoola!" Right at that moment, several thousand disciples had charged over and surrounded the Elysium Gate disciples.

However, when what happened next right at this moment shocked everyone.

The several dozen Elysium Gate disciples cooperated under Darryl's commands—defending and attacking at the same time. Their defense was like a huge bronze wall such that their formation had remained intact regardless of how those several thousand disciples attacked.

'What?'

'How could a mere several dozen people manage to defend against those few thousand people? It's way too strong!'

Aurora Hansen who was beside them felt her legs turn to jelly. She was stunned from looking at Darryl. At that moment, she saw how a few dozen Elysium Gate disciples fought against thousands of skilled men while biting her lip hard and trembled!

Chapter 973

The Elysium Gate only had a few dozen people! Those few thousand people could not even break through their formation!

'This...'

The skilled disciples from each sect looked at each other before looking at Darryl in disbelief!

At that moment, the formation Darryl deployed was the Eight Directions Sky Dragon Formation—one of the more obscure ones in the Bai Qi Formations.

The Eight Directions Sky Dragon Formations was created by Slaughter God Bai Qi who was once surrounded by an army of over a hundred thousand with only a thousand soldiers!

It could be said that the Eight Directions Sky Dragon Formation was an extremely powerful formation that none—no matter the army size could advance even a single step forward once it was deployed!

The crowd became more alarmed as they watched on!

Each sect had used almost all of the tricks in their book, yet still failed to break through the Elysium Gate's defenses!

"Let's stop. There's no need to compete anymore." At that moment, Shaolin's Sect Master Endless used his energy field as a thick voice came from his mouth.

Instantly, the offensive and defense team both stopped.

Sect Master Endless could barely hide his excitement as he saluted Darryl with a fist and palm before saying, "Master Darby indeed knows how to fully utilize his army. I'm fully convinced of your nomination as the Alliance Master. I have no further comments!"

At that moment, Sect Master Endless was speaking from the bottom of his heart.

Wudang Sect Master had also approached Darryl and respectfully said, "I'm in awe and admiration. Master Darby is indeed a master in the art of war. I also have nothing further to say! I'm fully convinced of your candidacy to be the Alliance Master!"

"Congratulations Master Darby! Oh, no. It should be Alliance Master Darby!"

"Alliance Master Darby, you are truly gifted! We'll be relying on your leadership in the martial arts world for the future!"

Suddenly, the other sect masters also spoke their minds.

Just moments ago, Darryl had used a few dozen people to defend against several thousand but was still able to plan his strategy with calmness and composure which was admirable!

However, no one realized that Douglas had secretly slipped out of the hall via the backdoor without anyone noticing. He had not expected Darryl would be so powerful that he could fully convince the crowd! His plan to stir up conflicts had failed so there was no point for him to continue staying there.

At the same time, Aurora with her icy expression was glaring at Darryl with a frown.

Darryl had actually won and was truly about to become the Alliance Master!

Nevertheless, Although he was excellent, he had killed her junior sister Abbess Mother Serendipity which made him the enemy of Emei!

Her expression turned colder as that thought crossed her mind. She was unwilling to remain there any longer and slowly stood up before saying to the Emei disciples, "We'll take our leave."

She then turned and left with the Emei disciples quickly following suit.

The other sect masters' expression was a little awkward when seeing that scene.

Naomi could not help but said, "Master Hansen, we just elected our Alliance Master. How could Emei just leave like that..."

Aurora stopped in her tracks, turned, and glanced coldly at Darryl with her emotionless face. "He's your Alliance Master which has nothing to do with the Emei Sect. Please just treat the Emei sect as though we didn't join this martial arts conference."

At this martial arts conference, she would not object to anyone becoming the Alliance Master except for Darryl!

Darryl killed her junior sister and she had yet to avenge her, how could she recognize him as the Alliance Master?

"Uh..."

The other sect masters looked at each other upon hearing her words and were rendered speechless.

They knew the rivalry between Emei and Darryl had been going on for a long time. However, they were outsiders in the conflict and it would be inappropriate for them to meddle in both their affairs.

At that moment, Aurora's eyes fell on Darryl. "Darryl Darby, I've yet to get revenge

for Abbess Mother Serendipity. Emei Sect shall never forget!"

Darryl thought, 'F*ck. Are all the people of Emei nuts? Previously, it was Abbess Mother Serendipity and now Aurora Hansen too.'

Chapter 974

Darryl had explained countless times that he did not know what happened to Abbess Mother Serendipity nor did he hurt her! However, Aurora still refused to believe him!

Darryl showed a nonchalant reaction as that thought crossed his mind and smiled at Aurora before saying, "Sure, I'll entertain you whenever you want to pay me back but you'll have to wear something as sexy as today. Otherwise, I won't have any interest in fighting against you."

Even though he was furious at heart, Darryl could not help but tease her.

"You!" Aurora gritted her teeth and felt like killing Darryl on the spot but held back.

The other sects were watching. Furthermore, Darryl had become their Alliance Master. It would be unwise to take action here when she thought about it. She then silently gritted her teeth and led her disciples to leave.

The atmosphere relaxed a little upon Aurora's departure.

Sect Master Endless approached Darryl at that moment and smiled, "Master Darby. The New World and Westrington fought each other quite a few times not long ago. Neither of them got the better of the other as both were equally strong. We believe they'll take some time to recover and gather strength now that they have stopped the war before attacking the World Universe. Please instruct us on how to guard against them!"

"Yes, yes. Please give us some advice!"

"Yes! The New World has their eyes on us for some time now and could attack us at any moment. What should we do?"

Suddenly, all of the other sect masters started questioning Darryl.

"This... Let me think." Darryl scratched his head while his face filled with bitterness.

'F*ck. Even though being the Alliance Master is a huge honor, it's not fun at all.'

He just started, yet had to immediately worry about the World Universe's safety. He only knew a few formations, how could he know about guarding and creating a preventive measure against the New World?

"Darryl." At this moment, Dax patted Darryl's shoulder and laughed. "Have fun slowly researching together with the other sects. Chester and I are going to have some alcohol somewhere else."

Dax was a straightforward man who only knew how to fight when talking about

the war between the two mainlands. His head would hurt once he started thinking about strategy deployment, so why not just go and have a drink!

As he said, the two sworn brothers pushed open the door and left.

'F*ck me...' Darryl did not know whether to cry or laugh. "Dax and Chester, wait for me!"

'F*ck. I want to have a drink too!' Darryl was extremely anxious. However, both of them were long gone and did not hear Darryl's words.

At the same time, the other sect masters surrounded Darryl.

"Master Darby, let's discuss how to defend the New World's attacks. It's not too late for a drink then!"

"Yes, Master Darby, we think that the New World will attack us again in a month."

Darryl felt his head hurt as he waved and said, "Fine, fine, fine! Stop for a moment!"

The crowd shut up at his words and looked at Darryl, waiting for him to speak.

"I'll teach you a few formations in a while," said Darryl before waving his hands.

"Awesome!" The crowd cheered at his words.

They had personally witnessed Darryl's amazing formations! How could they not be happy if they could learn a trick or two?

At this moment, the Wudang Sect Master slowly approached Darryl with three joss sticks at hand. He took a step forward and said, "Master Darby, you can teach us your formations later but you have to be sworn in now!"

The World Universe did not have an Alliance Master for a very long time. The last Alliance Master was during the end of the Ming Dynasty and the beginning of the Qing Dynasty around 400 years ago—Li Zicheng.

Throughout history, three joss sticks would be lit and prayed to the heavens upon the election of each Alliance Master where they would swear to properly lead the martial arts world heroes to spread good and get rid of the world's evil!

Darryl nodded and stopped smiling. He took over the three joss sticks and slowly walked toward Hexad School's field before swearing with everyone there bearing witness.

Chapter 975

On the other side of Donghai City's Red Flag Street.

Lily was walking absent-mindedly while wearing a mask.

William Lyndon had extorted Lily for another 50 million on behalf of the Lyndons. She felt extremely aggrieved. How could she get the money? William would sue her father if she could not raise the money.

She walked aimlessly on the streets with her mind thinking about ways to get the money and overheard people discussing the martial arts conference on the streets.

Lily did not have the mood to deal with these as William was coming at night to get the money. Where was she going to get 50 million? Her mind was in a mess.

The sounds of a man and woman chatting could be heard at that moment by the roadside bus stop.

"Have you heard? An Alliance Master had been elected at the martial arts conference."

"Really? Who's the Alliance Master?"

"Hehe. My friend is a Wudang Sect disciple and told me just now that it's the Elysium Gate Sect Master, Darryl Darby who won hands down with his excellent skills and was elected the Alliance Master. Sigh. Who knew a previously live-in son-in-law could have such an achievement now."

'What? Darryl?!' When Lily heard the conversation, she trembled and could not stop the excitement and happiness in her heart!

She thought Darryl was still in the New World on Mount Mingwang. Who knew he had returned and became the Alliance Master too!

At this moment, Lily felt her heart was about to pop out.

So what if her family extorted her? What about the 50 million? Forget all about it!

Lily quickly walked toward the man with her eyes full of urgency. "A-are you sure? Is what you just said? Darryl Darby is at the Hexad School and became the Alliance Master?"

She could not hide the urgency in her heart when she said that.

The man jumped before nodding. "It's true of course! My friend is a disciple of the Wudang sect! Why will I lie?"

Lily immediately turned around and ran toward the Hexad School!

At that moment, Lily wished she had a pair of wings so she could immediately reach the Hexad School.

Lily of course did not want to meet Darryl. She just wanted to see him from afar. Just one look! All she wanted was just one look at him! Even just his back and she would be more than satisfied.

...

The Hexad School field.

Darryl stood there with the other sect masters surrounding him and respectfully looking at him.

Darryl had prayed to the heavens and was sworn in with the three joss sticks in his hands just finished burning.

"My fellow sect masters, I'll be taking my leave," said Darryl before turning his head and smiling. He was anxious to look for Dax and Chester for a drink.

"Take care, Master Darby."

"Master Darby, take care!" The sect masters greeted.

Darryl nodded before slowly walking out of the Hexad School.

He had become the Alliance Master and was afraid that it might get extremely busy in the future as there would be matters—small or big—to handle non-stop.

Crash!

Just when he was by the school's main entrance, he met with a petite silhouette who was walking fast and could not avoid it in time before crashing into the person.

'F*ck. Who's walking so anxiously?' He muttered in his heart and was about to say something to the other person but when he saw that person's identity, he was suddenly stunned.

Chapter 976

The other person in a beige long dress was inexplicably sexy.

It was Katherine Keith, Darryl's old class teacher whom he had not seen in a very long time!

"Darryl Darby!"

At that moment, she was shocked and delighted at the same time when she saw Darryl. She quickly approached him in her high heels and could not hide the excitement in her heart. "Darryl, do you still remember me?"

Katherine was excited and emotional at the same time when she said that!

It had been more than a year since her student became a great hero who was admired by everyone! She was overjoyed from the bottom of her heart as his teacher.

"Miss Katherine, I remember of course. How could I forget?" Darryl smiled and looked at her. "Where are you going in such a hurry?"

He had not seen her for more than a year and was sizing her up as he said that. It had to be said that Katherine was a rare beauty with her body even more alluring. She became even more gorgeous than he last remembered.

Except for her powers which remained at Master General.

Katherine did not mind Darryl's glances. Her exquisite face was a little awkward. She bit her lip and said softly, "I-I...came looking for you. Darryl, did you forget you still have a few Resumption Pills that you haven't given me?"

A year ago, Katherine consumed a faulty Spirit Petrification Elixir which made her powers drop drastically to the level of a normal human being. Only Darryl's Resumption Pills could help her regain her powers back with every Resumption Pill helping her regain two power levels.

Initially, Darryl gave Katherine a few Resumption Pills which restored her powers to the Master General Level. However, it was difficult to meet Darryl again ever since the Lion Slaughtering Conference and this separation had lasted for more than a year.

On this day, Katherine specially made a trip over to the Hexad School after hearing Darryl would be there at the martial arts conference which was held there.

"Miss Katherine, have you not regained your full powers?" Darryl was amused by Katherine's expressions.

Katherine nodded before biting her lips and said, "For the past year, I've tried

many other methods but nothing worked..."

Darryl could not help but laugh and said, "If you want to regain your internal energy, you can only consume the Resumption Pill."

At his words, Katherine could not help but urgently grab onto Darryl's hand while feeling hopeful and said, "Darryl, you must help me fully regain my powers. Please, I'm begging you."

Darryl could not bear to refuse upon seeing her reactions. "Alright, but I don't have any Resumption Pill on me right now."

"Don't you know how to produce the elixir? The school has an elixir production room with assorted ingredients," said Katherine urgently while looking at Darryl without blinking.

Darryl could not help but laugh at her expressions. He could only nod. "Sure, sure, sure..."

'Miss Katherine sure is interesting. She wants me to produce the Resumption Pill on the spot for her? Is she afraid I might never come back? Haha!'

A few minutes later, Darryl and Katherine reached the school's elixir production room.

At that moment, Darryl's powers had increased and so did his skills in the art of elixir production which had also improved by many folds.

In a blink of an eye, Darryl had selected the ingredients, lit up the stove, and started producing the elixir. While making the elixir, he deliberately said, "Miss Katherine, my legs are sore."

"You..." Katherine bit her lip. Previously, she had massaged his legs and shoulders when Darryl was making the Resumption Pill for her. A year had passed with Darryl becoming a great hero which everyone admires, yet he was still as cheeky and playful as before.

Katherine looked at Darryl and pouted before walking over in her high heels, squatted in front of Darryl, and massaged his legs.

Darryl immediately felt spirited, pulled a chair over, and sat down with a satisfied expression.

"By the way, Miss Katherine. Did anything big happen in Hexad for the past year?" Darryl casually asked.

Katherine replied while massaging his legs, "Oh, plenty. Last winter, two male students were pursuing Circe Newman at the same time and ended up in a fight. These two students were from big families which resulted in a war between both the families that resulted in a casualty of over a hundred people.

"In addition, our class monitor—Declan Noel—entered an ancient tomb by mistake in February this year. He found loads of treasures which he then used to drastically improve his powers.

"In March..."

Katherine was smiling at Darryl as she said those. After a long while, a crashing sound could be heard with the cauldron emitting green smoke before a few Resumption Pills leaped out!

"Miss Katherine, the elixir is ready," said Darryl while smiling before handing Katherine the pills.

Katherine stood up with her trembling body. She accepted the pills and could not hide the excitement on her face!

Chapter 977

"Darryl, t-thank...you..." Katherine did not think much, hugged before instantly separating at the touch and happily walking out of the elixir production room.

Darryl only felt a whiff of aroma on his face before Katherine was long gone in a blink of an eye.

'Miss Katherine must be anxious to consume the Resumption Pill.' Darryl chuckled before walking out of the Hexad School.

At the entrance, he took his phone out and was about to call Dax asking for their drinking location.

'Hmm?' Right at this moment, Darryl was stunned as he could feel a murderous aura coming over.

Swish!

Darryl subconsciously turned his head around and saw Aurora Hansen led dozens of Emei disciples with longswords in their hands and approaching him from not far away.

At that moment, Aurora Hansen was still in her previous outfit of jeans and tight-fitting shirt—looking extremely sexy.

"Darryl, stop talking nonsense. You hurt my junior sister Abbess Mother Serendipity. Do you want to kill yourself as repayment or want me to do it for you?" Aurora coldly said.

Aurora had not taken action moments ago at the martial arts conference in front of the other heroes. However, she had brought her disciples along to block Darryl at that moment so how could they possibly let him go?

'F*ck! This is never-ending,' muttered Darryl in his heart.

He curtly said, "Master Hansen, I've told you before that I didn't kill Abbess Mother Serendipity. Furthermore, I don't know where she is."

Aurora did not believe a single word and only glared at Darryl before coldly said, "Darryl, stop trying to explain yourself. Previously, you went missing together with my junior sister but you came back in one piece, yet it's still unknown whether she's alive or dead. Who else could it be if you didn't hurt her?"

Darryl did not bother to argue with her. "I have no time to deal with you. Neither Abbess Mother Serendipity being alive or dead nor her whereabouts have anything to do with me! Not to mention I haven't even paid you back when you pushed me into the volcano crater, yet you come looking for me? You should

thank the heavens that I'm in a good mood today and won't bother with you."

Darryl turned and left as he said.

"Stop him!" Aurora coldly said with the sword humming in her hand.

"Yes, Sect Master!" The Emei disciples drew their longswords, quickly rushed forward in front of Darryl, and blocked him at her words.

Darryl frowned as he did not even look at those disciples before lightly laughed and said to Aurora, "Master Hansen, do you think your disciples are enough to block my way?"

At that time, many passersby stopped to look at the commotion.

"Isn't that Darryl Darby? It looks like he's about to fight with the Emei Sect!"

"My God, isn't that—the Emei Sect Master? She's truly a goddess!"

"Gorgeous... Too gorgeous!"

"So this is the Emei Sect Master, Aurora Hansen who was nicknamed ice mountain goddess? It's rumored that she's as beautiful as a fairy. Who knew we can be so fortunate to see her! She's not only gorgeous, but her beauty could even topple empires!"

Many men were gawking with some even taking their cellphones out and taking photos of Aurora Hansen.

Some even wanted to approach her but were chased away by Emei Sect disciples.

Aurora did not bother with the discussions around her as she glared at Darryl and coldly said, "Darryl, don't even think about leaving if you don't give me a satisfactory explanation today!"

Darryl was speechless at her remarks. He then smiled and said, "Aurora Hansen, are you interested in me? Did you leave the Hexad School earlier just now to wait for me at the entrance? Why? Do you want to be my wife now that you know I'm the Alliance Master? You're too embarrassed to say that, so you use Abbess Mother Serendipity as a cover?"

"Y-you... You're seeking death!" At that, Aurora only felt a surge of energy built up and slapped her palms toward Darryl!

Buzz!

The surrounding air seemed to freeze wherever the energy palm went!

Aurora was already a Level One Martial Emperor at that moment, so the palm's power was immensely powerful!

'She really made a move. Fine, I'll play along,' muttered Darryl in his heart. He let out a smile and lifted his hands to form a protective shield to block the energy palm. He met up with her attack immediately after and fought furiously against Aurora.

Truth be told, even though Darryl was also only a Level One Martial Emperor, he was still slightly more powerful than Aurora!

However, Darryl could not release those deadly moves in the middle of the city. If he were to release those techniques, it would kill a lot of innocent people after all. Therefore, Darryl did not use his full strength and only drew his Blood Drinking Sword and used the Celestial Swordsmanship to constantly clash against Aurora's longsword.

Chapter 978

Gasp!

Those who gathered around became excited and uplifted at the sight of this scene.

Aurora Hanson—a legendary goddess of the martial arts community who was as ethereal as a fairy. She was currently in a battle against Darryl with her perfect figure which made many of the men's eyes pop out. It was a treat for them!

In a blink of an eye, the two of them have exchanged dozens of rounds.

Unlike Darryl, Aurora did not think much as her every move had strong killing intent! However, Darryl used the Celestial Swordsmanship along with his pure energy to not only individually defuse her attacks but also enclosed the people around them in a protective shield.

Were it not for Darryl's protective shield, the people who gathered around to watch the commotion would have long been dead from internal injuries.

Aurora did not realize that Darryl was protecting the people and fighting against her at the same time. She only knew that Darryl's internal energy was as vast as the ocean and no matter how she attacked she could not hurt him!

Aurora suddenly started panicking at that moment.

Meanwhile, Darryl had a laid-back expression while fighting and did not forget to shamelessly admire Aurora's body.

"Aurora, did you purposely dress up so sexily for me? By the way, your junior sister—Abbess Mother Serendipity—once called me hubby. Do you want to call me that once and let me hear it?" Darryl giggled as he said that. The Blood Drinking Sword was flying in the air and constantly blocking Aurora's attacks.

Gasp!

Darryl's words got more and more immodest along with his rude actions. Aurora's exquisite face turned colder as she gritted her teeth and said, "Darryl, I have to kill you today!"

Haha!

Darryl became even more delighted upon seeing how livid Aurora was as he continued teasing, "Master Hansen, you're in the wrong here. I know you block me not due to avenge Abbess Mother Serendipity, but because you like me. Why are we still fighting and killing each other? Can't you be more gentle? Perhaps I'll agree to let you be my wife."

"Shut up!" Aurora's face turned to ice.

She was the Sect Master of the great Emei—cold and pure. How could she be humiliated by Darryl?!

Buzz!

At that moment, Aurora lifted her hands as a frightening aura kept emitting from her body which caused the surrounding air to be extremely distorted!

Roar!

At that moment, a 50-meter-length ice dragon slowly surrounded her!

The Icy Dragon Punch!

Darryl took a deep breath and tightly clenched his fist!

'Aurora has gone f*cking crazy! How could she use this move in the middle of the city! It's the Icy Dragon Punch! The Ice Dragon Punch! A move can even break mountains!'

Darryl's protective shield instantly shattered to pieces when the ice dragon appeared!

"Aurora! Do you not care about the lives of these innocent people?" Darryl said coldly with his forehead profusely sweating. He waved his hand and another two protective shields appeared to protect the surrounding people.

At that moment, Darryl no longer bothered about his own safety! The first thing on his mind was to protect these innocent people! Just the Icy Dragon Punch's aftershock could tear these people into pieces! It would be a bloodbath had he not protected them!

Buzz!

The people were protected by those two protective shields. However, the ice dragon had reached in front of Darryl at that moment!

If the Icy Dragon Punch reached Darryl, he would definitely die even if he was a Martial Emperor!

Right at this moment, a woman with a great figure walked out from the crowd and was wearing a mask which only showed her clear bright eyes. It was none other than Lily!

Just moments ago, Lily quickly rushed over when she heard Darryl was at the Hexad School.

At that moment, she was trembling in fury upon seeing how Darryl's life was

hanging by the thread!

"Hubby, be careful!" Lily could not help but gently yell in a panic with reddened eyes.

Lily's voice was very soft! However, how could Darryl not have heard with his current powers? At that moment, Darryl felt his mind buzzed and went blank!

'Is... Is this Lily's voice?'

He had lived with Lily for three years. Her voice had been deeply imprinted in a deep corner of his soul such that he could never wrongly recognize her voice!

Chapter 979

"L-Lily? Lily?! Is that you?" Darryl was extremely excited!

At that moment, Aurora's ice dragon was also right in front of Darryl!

Clang!

In a panic, Darryl swerved aside to avoid it and lifted the Blood Drinking Sword right in front of him at the same time to block the dragon.

Darryl's speed was already very fast. Although he could avoid the dragon's head, he could not avoid its tail! The ice dragon's tail clashed against the Blood Drinking Sword with a loud noise and forced Darryl back by dozens of steps.

"Uh!" Darryl spat out a mouthful of fresh blood. He felt as though his organs had been injured due to the reverberation. He was truly internally injured at this moment!

However, he did not care about his injuries and scanned the surroundings. He was trying desperately to locate a person!

"Lily, is that you?" Darryl yelled out loud with reddened eyes with his extremely hoarse voice.

Darryl was very certain that the person who just said the phrase 'Hubby, be careful!' was Lily. 'Lily did not die. She isn't dead?'

At that moment, Darryl did not have the mood to continue fighting against Aurora as his mind was filled with Lily!

Tears were forming in his eyes as he kept searching among the crowd. However, there were too many people around and he could not find Lily.

'Hubby!' Lily's heart was trembling upon seeing Darryl's eyes glancing over her direction! Tears fell from her eyes.

'Hubby... He heard my voice. He didn't forget me and still loves me!' Lily was extremely overwhelmed. She really wanted to run and tightly hugged Darryl!

However, Lily immediately dismissed the idea in the next second. No, she could not see Darryl.

Her current self was an ugly person that even she dared not look in the mirror. How could she be worthy of Darryl? He would be frightened too if he saw her now!

Lily felt her chest heavy as she thought about this. She was so upset and could not breathe as tears kept falling. She turned around and squeezed through the

crowd before running far away.

'Hubby, I'm so sorry. I can't see you. I truly can't...' Lily wiped her tears while running. However, her tears would not stop.

"Lily!" Darryl was still searching hard for her among the crowd. However, she was nowhere to be seen!

"Darryl, die!"

Just at this moment, Aurora violently served another palm of energy which aimed for Darryl's heart upon seeing the distracted Darryl!

"F*ck off!" Darryl was anxious to chase after Lily but was forced to deal with the oncoming attack. He released his fury, used his energy field, turned around, and blocked Aurora's move!

Clang!

Two palms meet—releasing a low reverberation humming sound. The huge attack force made Aurora retreat a few steps.

"Master Hansen, I don't have time to play along with you, so don't force me," said Darryl coldly as he glared at Aurora.

He did not bother to continue fighting upon saying that and waved his Blood Drinking Sword to force the Emei disciples back before immediately turning around and walking into the crowd.

"Lily, where are you? Lily..." Darryl's entire body was trembling as he looked around among the crowd. However, Lily was long gone.

'Lily! Why don't you want to see me? You're still alive. I'm sure you're still alive! That is your voice!' Darryl's heart was aching as he did not give much thought before quickly rushing toward Lily's mansion.

"Master, are you alright?"

"Are you alright, Master?"

The Emei disciples immediately surrounded Aurora and asked in concern when Darryl left.

"I'm fine," replied Aurora coldly as she looked at Darryl's back. She then icily said, "Go and gather the disciples. I cannot forgive Darryl Darby."

Chapter 980

"Yes!"

...

On the other side, Lily rushed home in a state of distress.

On the way, her mind was filled with Darryl as her tears kept falling and her heart was aching as though being stabbed by a knife. The person that she loved most was right in front of her, yet she could not hug him!

The more Lily thought, the more aggrieved she felt! She blamed Matteo Hanson! Tears ran down her lashes and just kept falling.

Samantha was on the sofa playing on her phone when she reached home.

"Lily..." Samantha quickly stood up upon seeing Lily's return with her reddened eyes and could not help but asked, "What happened? Did William call you and press you for the money?"

Lily's expression was bitter, but she still forced a smile and shook her head. "No..."

"Lily! Are you there? Lily!"

She just barely muttered something when there were knocks on the door. It was Darryl!

'Hubby! He came all the way here!' Lily's heart shuddered. She was extremely anxious, yet touched at the same time. She felt her nose sore as a few more teardrops fell.

"Mom, Darryl's here. Tell him I'm not home," said Lily softly while gritting her teeth before quickly heading upstairs.

'Hubby, I'm so sorry. I really can't see you like this. I just can't! I hope that I can remain always beautiful in your memory...'

Knock! Knock! Knock!

Darryl knocked on the door furiously and finally smashed the door into pieces in a panic before quickly walking in.

At that moment, it was only Samantha in the hall. Darryl was anxious and sweating profusely on his forehead before he said with reddened eyes, "Auntie Samantha, where's Lily. Where is she?! Did she just come back? Where is she? Where is she?!"

"You..."

At that instant, Samantha was completely stunned and felt extremely conflicted. Ever since Darryl became the World Universe's hero, she regretted her past actions of treating Darryl harshly.

However, she also knew that Lily and Darryl's fate were at its end. Things can't be forced after all, Lily and Darryl just were not fated to be with each other.

At that moment, her daughter's face had been utterly ruined. It would just be self-humiliating if she let Darryl meet with Lily. Samantha let out a long sigh and said, "Lily...isn't at home."

'Not at home?' Darryl was momentarily stunned before he immediately rushed to Lily's room on the second floor. He noticed the room was locked from the inside.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Darryl banged on the door and loudly yelled, "Lily, you are inside right? Why did you leave just now? Why don't you want to see me?"

As he said that, Darryl felt his chest heavy and his eyes could not help but become wet.

A year. It had been more than a year.

He thought that Lily had died and his heart terribly ached every time he thought of her. He blamed himself for previously letting go. All these would not have happened if he did not let go.

At that moment, he was inexplicably elated from knowing Lily was not dead.

His only thought was to hug Lily tightly in his arms and never letting go again. He would be with her for the rest of their lives and never let her go!

In her room, Lily was leaning against the door while listening to Darryl's yells. She felt as though her heart was smashed to pieces as she sobbed terribly.

She truly wanted to open the door and hugged Darryl, but did not dare to do so! She had no courage!

"Hub—Darryl!"

Lily tried hard to finally calm herself down. She subconsciously wanted to yell out 'Hubby' but she forced herself to stop.

The next second, she took a deep breath and said with her trembling voice, "Darryl, stop yelling. I-I...don't want to see you!" She was no longer worthy for him, so why not let him give up on her?

Chapter 981

"What?" Darryl was stunned for a while. He felt as though something invisible punched his heart and hoarsely roared, "Why? Lily, why don't you want to see me? Why? Tell me..."

He was immensely upset and said with his extremely hoarse voice.

"Darryl, our relationship ended a year ago. Please don't find me again, ok?" Lily could not help but wailed as scenes of her past kept flashing by in her mind. Her tears could not stop flowing.

'Hubby, I miss you so much. I want to hug you, be in your arms, and talk to you but I really cannot see you with my current appearance. I can't... Please forget about me,' thought Lily.

Darryl felt his chest got heavier at Lily's words and yelled, "Ended? If that's the case, why did you head to the New World to find me then? I know you were tricked by Justin Quinn and injured by the Incandescent Sect. I've avenged you, Lily. Please tell me, what did you go through, please?"

Darryl did not believe Lily would be so heartless. There must be some hidden reason behind it.

Darryl felt unspeakable pain and pity in his heart with this thought in mind. "Lily, I'll face it together with you no matter how aggrieved you felt. Please open the door, alright?"

Lily's entire body felt like jelly and could barely stand up upon hearing Darryl's yells. She sobbed and shook her head. "Darryl, I'm fine. Please go and forget about me. I don't want to see you, I don't..."

Her voice got softer and softer toward the end. She was sobbing hard and could pass out at any moment.

At this moment, the defenses in Lily's heart were on the brink of collapse.

However, Lily still gritted her teeth and held back the urge to open the door.

She was afraid! Afraid Darryl might see her current state and did not dare to see Darryl.

"Lily!" Darryl was sweating profusely on his forehead. He could easily break down the door of course. However, Lily was right behind the door at this moment. What would happen to Lily if he forcefully entered?

"Lily, I'm begging you to please open the door. I'm begging you... I'm begging you!" Darryl wailed and punched the wall a few times with his tear-filled face.

Clang!

At the same time, a loud sound could be heard from below before William walked in with a few men following behind and smiled maliciously.

Samantha who was downstairs suddenly came to her senses and quickly approached them before yelling at William, "What are you doing here?"

William sneered, "What am I doing here? Did you forget? I've previously said I'll come here today for the money. You'll have to mortgage the mansion if you can't give me the fifty million."

William smiled wickedly as he said that. "Do you see the men behind me? They are real estate agents."

After that, He turned back and said to those real estate agents, "All of you come here, aren't you the best in the industry? Look at this mansion and give me an estimated price."

The few real estate agents with a list in their hands headed to Samantha's bedroom and started assessing without any respect for Samantha once he said that.

"You... Who allowed you to enter my bedroom. Out! Get out! William Lyndon, you're heartless! This mansion is bought with my daughter's own hard-earned money. It doesn't belong to the Lyndon family." Samantha was livid and wanted to chase these people away, but she's only a woman with no deterrent power.

William nastily smiled. "You're daughter's own money? She previously worked for our estate, isn't the money she earned still belongs to our family's? Move or I'll get them to throw you out."

He scanned his surroundings as he said that. "By the way, where's your ugly daughter? Did she go and hide since she couldn't get the money?"

"F*ck all of you. F*ck off!"

At this moment, a roar exploded from the second floor as Darryl strode downstairs with a cold expression.

"Wow, you've hidden a man in your house too. I..." William cockily lifted his head which instantly locked eyes with Darryl before started trembling and almost lost his balance.

'Darryl Darby?!'

There were rumors that Darryl died in the volcano crater a year ago. However, they said he had not died and was recently always staying at the Carter mansion.

However, why was he here? Did he not already divorced Lily? 

Chapter 982

William came to his senses after being stunned for a few seconds before saying to Darryl, "Darryl, why are you yelling at me? Let me tell you now. This is Lyndon family's business and has nothing to do with you."

William was anxious in his heart upon saying that. He would not even bother looking at Darryl if that had happened in the past. However, Darryl was now the Elysium Gate Sect Master and the hero who saved the entire World Universe. He was a highly admirable person with his social status no longer the same as before.

However, William was not too nervous about this. Even though Darryl's status in the martial arts world was high, he had no right to meddle in the family matters of others. After all, Darryl no longer had ties with the Lyndons.

'What? He's Darryl Darby?' The few real estate agents were instantly baffled.

Who would not know of Darryl Darby in the entire World Universe? His name was highly known and reputable.

Darryl clenched his fist tightly without an ounce of emotion on his face. "I'm saying it once more. F*ck off!"

Darryl was already upset by Lily not opening the door and he felt the anger in him surfacing when he saw William coming over to look for trouble.

"Hoola..." At his words, the few real estate agents did not dare to let out a single breath and frantically left.

However, William did not leave and looked at Darryl with his flushed face before saying, "This mansion will be the Lyndons' soon. What right do you have in asking me to leave?"

"What right?" Darryl's eyes were reddened. He was married to Lily for three years and had seen William torment Lily for those three years! He had put up with William for a whole three years!

"I asked you to f*cking leave!" Darryl roared as he lifted his palm fiercely and slapped hard on William's face!

Slap!

This slap made William fly backward dozens of meters into the living hall's entrance!

"You..." William was dumbfounded by the slap with his mind still buzzing. He stood up while rubbing his face with one hand and pointed at Darryl with the

other before saying with a trembling voice, "Ok, Darryl. Y-you... I-I..."

He wanted to say more but saw Darryl approaching him closer with each step! In that instance, William felt as if he was being preyed on by a predator upon looking at Darryl's eyes. William did not know where he mustered the strength from at that moment to stand up and run away! He was gone in a blink of an eye.

"Woo..." Darryl let out a long breath before tilting his head and looked at Samantha. "Auntie Samantha, what's going on? Why did he want to sell the mansion and what rights does he have to sell it?"

Darryl clearly remembered this mansion was bought by Lily using the money she earned from live-streaming.

At that time, he spent quite a fortune on Lily's live-streaming.

"Sigh..." At the mention of this, Samantha bit her lip and said, "The Lyndon family recently has fallen into a financial crisis and forced Lily to come up with the money. Lily sold her beloved Worship of Crystal, yet they are still unsatisfied and are forcing us to sell our mansion as well.

'What?' Darryl's eyes instantly turned red from livid.

The Worship of Crystal was his first gift to Lily.

How dared they forced Lily into such extremities! Are they even humans?!

Darryl clenched his fist tightly as tears fell. He lowered his energy field and yelled, "Lily, I'll come and find you every day and talk with you through the door since you don't want to see me. I won't let you suffer anymore from today onward!"

His eyes were filled with fury when he finished as he turned to leave.

Chapter 983

At the Lyndon Mansion in the afternoon.

Granny Lyndon was sitting on her chair with over a hundred family members standing before her.

Happy smiles were plastered on all of their faces.

Yesterday, Lily transferred 100 million into the family's account which solved the family's financial crisis.

However, recently Granny Lyndon had her eyes on another project which was not too huge of a project but needed at least a capital of 10 to 20 million, hence William had brought a few men to urge Lily into selling her mansion.

They could invest in this project as long as they received the money from selling the mansion! It would be profitable for their family!

As for that ugly Lily, it was none of their business whether they have a house to live in or otherwise.

At that moment, the entire Lyndon family including Granny Lyndon was waiting for William's good news.

"Granny!"

Right at this moment, a wail came from the entrance followed by William stumbling in.

Half of his face was extremely red with his eyes bruised—looking wretched.

"William, what happened to your face?" Granny Lyndon was stunned and quickly stood up.

The surrounding people looked at William. He was clearly beaten up by someone.

"William, who hit you?"

"Who dares hit a family member of the Lyndon family? How bold of them!" Granny Lyndon slammed the table.

William was her favorite grandchild and seeing how badly he was beaten up made her furious.

William felt aggrieved upon their concerns and loudly cried, "Granny, I brought a few men to Lily's mansion and ask for the money but met Darryl Darby. I did not say anything, yet he had beaten me up! Look at how badly I was beaten! Granny, you have to get justice for me!"

'What? Darryl Darby?'

Granny Lyndon instantly tensed.

The entire Lyndon family's expressions changed as well. They were initially furious but suddenly shut their mouths up.

Darryl Darby was once a live-in son-in-law the Lyndons looked down upon. However, he was no longer the same as in the past. He was the entire World Universe's hero at that moment!

In addition, news just spread moments ago that he was now the Alliance Master!

The Darryl at that moment was a person the Lyndons could look up to but not touch!

They could still get some justice if anyone else had beaten William up. However, who would dare be so reckless in front of him—Darryl Darby?

William cried even louder at this scene, "Granny, Darryl can't just beat people up even if he's of a higher status. Furthermore, this is our family's business. He has no right to interfere even if he is the Alliance Master!"

Gasp!

The surrounding people suddenly burst into a heated discussion upon hearing William's words.

"Yes, he can't simply bully people even if he becomes the Master of the Martial Art Community!"

"He no longer has any relations with us. What right does he have in meddling with the Lyndon family's business?"

Granny Lyndon frowned and thought for a while with a serious expression and said, "Yes, it's unreasonable for Darryl to interfere in the Lyndon family's business. He also shouldn't have beaten William up..."

As she said that, Granny Lyndon looked at William and asked, "Where's Darryl? Someone, go and get Darryl Darby! I want an explanation for William!"

William was her most favorite grandchild and Granny Lyndon was distressed upon seeing how badly he was beaten up.

"You don't have to come and get me. I'm here."

At that moment, a cold voice came from the main hall outside before a straight figure slowly walking in.

It was Darryl!

'What?'

'Darryl came over by himself?'

Chapter 984

At that moment, the entire hall was silent with the entire Lyndon family's eyes on Darryl with a conflicting expression mixed with fear.

At the same time, they could feel the powerful aura emitting from Darryl causing none to dare say anything.

They could feel the Darryl before them was not the same as a year ago—a loser they could tease and insult.

"Darryl!" At that moment, Granny Lyndon was the first to come to her senses and coldly said to Darryl, "What are you doing here?"

Granny Lyndon has lived a long life after all. Her life experiences could not be compared with the younger generation. She could still maintain her composure as the family head even when facing a powerful figure like Darryl.

Darryl scanned the surroundings and did not bother to talk any nonsense. He looked at Granny Lyndon and enunciated his words, "I'm going straight to the point. Return to Lily her one hundred million bucks now with not a single cent less! Or else...!"

At this point, Darryl paused for a while before scanning his surroundings and said, "Or else, I'll make the Lyndon family name vanish!"

Gasps!

Cold gasps could be heard!

Darryl's last two sentences were flatly spoken without a hint of emotion. However, it still stunned the entire Lyndon family when he said them.

"Darryl!" William finally came to his senses. He stood up, pointed at Darryl, and yelled, "You're an outsider yet you dictate to us what to do! Is there still any justice?"

At his words, the surrounding Lyndon family members echoed in agreement.

"Yes, you don't have any relations with us Lyndons. What rights do you have to meddle in our affairs?"

"You want us to return money to that ugly thing? You're too naive."

'Ugly?' Darryl's eyes reddened at that instant and coldly swept the surrounding with his eyes.

Gasps!

At that moment, those who saw Darryl's eyes shuddered from his intimidating

gaze.

Darryl looked at William before asking, "Why do all of you call Lily ugly? What happened to her?"

William did not answer as he was frightened half to death by Darryl's scary gaze. How would he dare say anything at that moment!

"Darryl!"

After a very long time, Granny Lyndon stood up trembling with her walking cane. She looked at Darryl and emotionlessly said, "Darryl, you are not who you used to be. You're a highly positioned Alliance Master. You can indeed easily destroy the Lyndons with your current powers!"

At that, she changed her tone. "However, all matters done have to be reasonable. You are no longer the Lyndons' son-in-law nor do you also have any more relations with Lily. Therefore, you don't have the right to meddle in our affairs! I won't return her the hundred million, so please leave."

Granny was inexplicably nervous when she said that. Darryl had the Elysium Gate after all and only needed a single command to wipe out the entire Lyndon family.

However, Granny Lyndon was certain that Darryl would not use such radical ways of the martial arts world as he would be condemned by the entire martial arts world if he did so! It was known as a shameless act if a martial arts world's sect were to take action against a small family!

"Woo!" The surrounding Lyndon family members secretly regained their courage at those words.

Yes, Darryl could not bully the weak even if his background was stronger. He was the Alliance Master and every move he made was under the scrutiny of the World Universe. His reputation would be tarnished if he were to take action against the Lyndon family.

Darryl laughed loudly at her words. "Granny Lyndon. Do you mean that you don't plan on returning the money?" Darryl sneered and slowly said.

Granny Lyndon sneered and thoughtlessly said, "Darryl, don't bother trying to intimidate me. I'm old so I won't be frightened by you. Even if you are strong, you cannot touch the Lyndon family! Is there still any justice left if the Alliance Master takes action against us? Let me tell you, I won't only not return the hundred million but I'll take another fifty million from Lily. Lily will have nothing to do with the Lyndon family ever once I've got the money."

Granny Lyndon then firmly said, "We won't ever bother Lily ever again once we have the fifty million."

Darryl slowly walked up and looked at Granny Lyndon before icily said, "Hehe, I

want to ask you. Why should Lily give you any money? Why should I let you bully my wife?"

Chapter 985

"We did not bully Lily," said Granny Lyndon coldly.

Darryl looked at Granny Lyndon and said, "Hehe... Granny Lyndon, I used to respect you a lot. You support an entire family at such an old age. However, you casually said you did not bully my wife. Does your heart not hurt when you say these words? Let me ask you, have you ever given Lily a moment of comfort in your entire life? Everything you have done is either bullying her or giving her a hard time! Now, you disregard your own granddaughter for the sake of the family's interest! I don't see the need for such a family to exist!"

Granny Lyndon used her walking cane and took two steps forward before she slowly said, "I'm going to say what I've said, I don't need you to meddle in the Lyndon family's affair! Can the Alliance Master simply force matters?"

"Hehe." Darryl laughed in anger and glared at Granny Lyndon. "You think that I can't use any forces on the Lyndons due to my identity? Yes, you're right. However, I have a million ways to let the Lyndon family name vanish from Donghai City! I'm going to make the Lyndon family bankrupt in half an hour!"

Half an hour to bankrupt the entire Lyndon family!

This sentence rang like thunder in the Lyndon family members' ears.

Instantly, the entire hall was dead silent that even the sound of a pin dropping could be heard clearly.

Granny Lyndon was stunned. 'Make the Lyndons bankrupt? What utter nonsense!'

Even though Darryl was of a respectable position in the martial arts world, he was kicked out of the Darby family four years ago. His Platinum Corporation company had also shut down long ago. It had to be known that you would need a strong business background to make the Lyndon family bankrupt.

Darryl was a martial arts man. It was simply impossible just relying on his martial arts background!

"Darryl, who are you trying to intimidate?" At that moment, William came to his senses and smiled ambiguously at Darryl. "I admit that you're renowned in the martial arts world. However, it's hard to say in the business world. Your previous Platinum Corporation or whatever company in Donghai City from what I know had long bankrupted. What other resources do you have on hand to bankrupt us in half an hour? What a joke!"

William's eyes were full of mockery as he said that.

Previously, it was met with public outrage from all of the families in Donghai City

when Darryl made a huge scene at the Langleys' wedding.

Darryl's Platinum Corporation was long gone under the joint forces of various families. Without relying on the martial arts world, how could he make the Lyndon family bankrupt using just business tactics? Just with his mouth?

Gasp!

At those words, the Lyndon family members nodded in agreement.

Yes, Darryl's Elysium Gate was not involved in any business at all. What was he going to use to quash the Lyndon family?

Darryl let out a long breath. He slowly took his phone out, created a group chat, and only sent one sentence in the group chat.

The sentence was a mere few words, [Immediately terminate all cooperation with the Lyndon family. I want them completely bankrupt within half an hour!]

Ding! Ding! Ding!

At that moment, Darryl's phone kept ringing non-stop. In a short few seconds, he received dozens of messages with just two words, [Got it!]

Darryl sat on the chair and kept his phone. He fished out a cigarette and lit it before taking a huge puff.

"Granny, It's bad! It's bad!"

Chapter 986

A man came stumbling in at that moment. It was the assistant to Lyndon Estate's president!

"What happened?" Granny Lyndon reprimanded. "What's going on? Talk slowly and Don't be rude."

The President's assistant was almost in tears as he quickly approached and said, "Granny, something huge has happened! Something huge! Just now, the Brandon Abby siblings sent a few hundred men to surround our company!"

"What?!" Granny Lyndon was shocked. All the while, the Lyndons paid monthly protection fees to the Brandon Abby siblings since they were Donghai City Underworld's ruler! No family in Donghai City would dare to offend those siblings. However, the Lyndon family did not offend them at all...

Granny was just about to speak when the President's assistant wiped his cold sweat off and continued, "Granny, not only that! Just now, the Oriental Pearl issued a statement saying they will never receive guests from the Lyndon family! All hotels in Donghai City—about thousands of them were influenced by the Oriental Pearl and have also issued statements saying that they won't receive any guests of the Lyndon family! Many of our business partners have been chased out of the hotels!

"What did you say?" At that moment, Granny Lyndon's face turned white with her body fumbling, and almost fainted on the ground.

At the same time, the Lyndon family members were bewildered.

"Granny! There's more!" The President's assistant swallowed his saliva and softly said, "All of Lyndons' real estate projects have been terminated. The Black Tiger Real Estate's president just called to say that they are banning the Lyndon family!

"Not only that..." The President's assistant was thoroughly wet from cold sweat. "Dragon Tech's Paul James and Poesia Eleganza's Emily Dickinson has issued a statement asking all of their peers in various fields to terminate cooperations with the Lyndons!"

"E-even..." the President's assistant took two steps back and slowly said, "even Southeast Petroleum has issued a statement banning the Lyndons. Now, there isn't a single petrol station in Donghai City that will dare let the Lyndon family's vehicles use their services."

Total silence! The entire huge Lyndon mansion was in total silence!

Every single news given by the Assistant was like a heavy bomb going off and

ringing in their ears!

The more than a hundred Lyndon family members looked at each other with confusion on their faces before their eyes finally landed on Darryl!

Could it be Darryl's arrangement for all these business giants to join forces to ban the Lyndon family?

This thought surfaced in everyone's mind as their faces were filled with fear.

Granny Lyndon shuddered. She stood up stumbling, looked at the assistant, and asked, "How did this happen?" She refused to believe Darryl has such huge powers!

The Assistant was almost in tears and said, "Granny Lyndon, I-I...don't know what is happening. In just a few minutes not long ago I received dozens of calls banning the Lyndon family..."

"Old Lady!"

At this moment, Darryl put out the cigarette in his hand before smiling and stood up. He looked at Granny Lyndon and slowly said, "Don't bother asking him, he's just an employee after all. Let me tell you—Brandon Guy, Abby Guy, Felix Blakely, and the others were all arranged by me."

"You..." Granny leaned on her walking cane and took two steps back. Her entire body was trembling, "Y-you... You're talking nonsense."

Darryl sneered, "Hehe. Old Lady, aren't there many big bosses taking the initiative to cooperate with the Lyndon family for the past two years? Let me tell you the truth behind these bosses who cooperated with you, all of them owe and are grateful to me. I let them look after the Lyndon family slightly more for Lily's sake back then.

"You really think that people like Felix Blakely initially cooperated with you because of your network resources? You're wrong, it was because of me.

"In other words, the Lyndon family would have long gone bankrupt relying on pests like William without me! It's impossible to have lasted until now!

"If I can make the Lyndons live, I can also end you and never let you recover again!"

Gasp! Such powerful words!

Every word was like a huge boulder crushing Granny Lyndon's chest!

Chapter 987

Every Lyndon family members' eyes were on Darryl at that moment. They felt the man in front of them was like a huge mountain that they could not overcome!

Business giants like Felix Blakely were Darryl's men.

After a long while, Granny Lyndon let out a long breath and smashed her walking cane hard on the floor. "Darryl, you think you can bring the Lyndon family down just like that? Even though our family has businesses in real estate, cosmetics, and tech all these years, we can continue even without these! Have you forgotten the Lyndon family's main income is from entertainment? Do you know how many celebrities we have churned out all these years?"

Gasp!

The eyes of every Lyndon family member instantly sparkled brightly.

Yes, the Lyndon family still had their entertainment industry business! It was not difficult to rise again with that!

"Hehe..." Darryl sneered without saying anything.

At that very moment, the Assistant's phone suddenly vibrated from receiving a message. He looked at his cellphone's message before his face instantly turned white!

"We're finished! We're finished! Finished..." The Assistant felt as though his energy was completely gone as he slumped on the floor. "Granny, Darrell Entertainment just sent us a message saying they are terminating all projects with us. They also urged the entire entertainment industry to ban the Lyndon family."

'What?' Granny Lyndon stumbled upon his words. Her walking cane fell straight on the floor. It was a long time before she came to her senses.

Darrell Entertainment was one of the top entertainment companies with abundant resources and countless celebrities under its umbrella. Half a year ago, the Lyndon family spent huge efforts to finally be able to successfully collaborate with Darrell Entertainment!

They believed their future would be bright so long they could rely on such a large company like Darrell Entertainment!

At that moment, even Darrell Entertainment had terminated their work with them which only meant the Lyndon family's last hope was gone as well!

At that moment, Darryl smiled vaguely at Granny Lyndon. "I forget to tell you that

Darrell Entertainment is my company. Its predecessor is none other than the Platinum Corporation."

That one sentence had crushed the defenses of everyone there.

'What? Darrell Entertainment belongs to Darryl?'

'Darrell... Darrell... Does that not sound like Darryl?'

At that moment, the entire Lyndon family members' faces turned miserably pale after silently pondering in their hearts!

Had that man only spent 10 minutes to completely bankrupt the Lyndon family? Was this the loser live-in Son-in-law that everyone previously despised?!

At that moment, Granny Lyndon finally came to her senses. How could she still be as cocky as she was? She trembled and looked at Darryl before saying with her trembling voice, "Darryl, can you let us live..."

She could not hide the fear in her as she said that! Yes, Granny Lyndon was finally afraid.

The Lyndon family's name had been removed from Donghai City in such a short time before they barely reacted!

Darryl smiled lightly and coldly said, "I had given you a chance, but too bad that you don't cherish it!"

As he said, he scanned the surroundings with his eyes sweeping across every Lyndon family member. "Your Lyndon family likes to bully people, right? You like to bully my wife, right? What's the point for the Lyndon family existing on Earth then?"

He turned and strode away after that!

Thud!

At that moment, Granny Lyndon could not handle the pressure anymore and fell from her bench.

At the same moment, everyone trembled with none could even stand steadily!

They were done for! The Lyndon family was completely done for!

Chapter 988

Darryl's words were echoing in everyone's mind.

...

On the other side at Westington, Prime Minister Residence.

In the middle of a quiet elegant garden, Donoghue Dixon wearing a long satin robe was seated in the pavilion sipping tea while admiring the rock garden and flowing water in front of him.

A few maidservants stood readily by his side to serve him.

Donoghue should be relaxed when looking at this scenery. However, his expression was a little dark.

As Westington's Prime Minister, he was highly respected with only one above him and thousands below. However, Donoghue was not happy at all.

He found it hard to sleep and eat as long as his nemesis Darryl Darby was not dead!

"Prime Minister."

A gentle voice could be heard at this moment. It was from the Five Poison Sect Master, Lindsay Jones who walked through the corridor and approached him.

Lindsay was wearing a red long dress which showed off her tight figure. She looked inexplicably seductive and charming.

She lightly laughed when she stood before Donoghue. "Prime Minister, you've suddenly called for me. Is there anything you need me to do?"

Donoghue looked at her and said, "Lindsay, the matter I instructed you on. What's the progress now? Have Yvonne Young killed Darryl and the rest? Also, when can you get me his head?"

"This..."

Lindsay let out a soft sigh upon hearing his words and slowly said, "Yvonne took action once not long ago and tried to kill one of the women always by Darryl's side called Jewel but was unsuccessful."

Slam!

Donoghue was furious and violently slammed the table. "Lindsay, didn't you say that Darryl will die within a month? What happened? Half a month has passed! Not only did he not die, I heard he has even become the Alliance Master of World

Universe! How do you explain this?" He was furious as he said that.

"Prime Minister, please calm down."

Lindsay felt his wrath and said, "Please give me more time. You won't be disappointed as I've recently urged Yvonne to kill those by Darryl's side."

Donoghue took a deep breath and nodded. "Fine. However, she might not be able to kill Darryl even if Yvonne could kill those by Darryl's side. After all, I hear that Darryl is extremely powerful now. She might not be able to kill Darryl even if Yvonne sneakily attacked him. I don't see a reason why not. Lindsay, you should urge Yvonne to quickly take action. Meanwhile, pack up and come with me to the World Universe. I want to kill Darryl myself."

His eyes were filled with fury as he said that!

Donoghue clenched his fist tightly when he recalled the Dixon family's terrible ruin. He could not wait to appear in front of Darryl and crush him to pieces!

"Hmm." Lindsay nodded, turned, and left.

...

Lily's Mansion in Donghai City at World Universe three days later.

In the living room, Lily sat distractedly with her reddened eyes as though she lost her soul.

Darryl had been pleading to see her daily ever since he came to her house.

Every time he came, Lily would lock herself in her room while yelling and crying at Darryl to leave. Lily would pretend to be heartless each time but knew clearly she could endure it much longer.

Lily loved Darryl too much and did not want to keep Darryl out every single time.

There were a few times she almost wanted to open the door but force herself to hold back.

She was heartbroken whenever Darryl left. The feeling was worse than death itself!

"Lily!"

Right at that moment, the living room's door was pushed open before Granny Lyndon came in while trembling under the others' support.

Lily was stunned. She stood and said, "Granny, w-why...are all of you here?"

Chapter 989

Lily saw Granny Lyndon was looking depressed. She had only not seen her for a few days and she seemed to have suddenly aged a lot.

Behind Granny Lyndon were William and the others with their heads low. They did not even dare to breathe their arrogant and domineering look long gone.

'What happened?' Lily was surprised.

At that moment, Lily did not know the destitute Lyndon Estate was completely bankrupt!

Thud!

Granny bent her knees and knelt when Lily was still lost in her thoughts! Her old face was sincerely pleading, "Lily, Granny was wrong. Please forgive me and let us live, please?"

Thud!

At the same time, William and the others knelt in front of Lily!

"Y-you-all..."

Lily was frightened and did not know what to do. "Granny, what happened? Get up. W-what happened?"

In her heart, Granny Lyndon was a strong person and had never seen her gravel or beg anyone before.

Granny Lyndon's face was filled with frustration and bitterly said, "Lily, the Lyndon family is finished. Darryl only sent a text and that has utterly destroyed the Lyndon Estate. Lily, I know that Darryl did this for you. It's all Granny's fault. I shouldn't have treated you that way. After all, you are still part of the Lyndon family. We might still have a chance to turn around if you could willingly speak up and plead with Darryl on our behalf, please? You can consider that I'm begging you, please?"

'What? Darryl made the Lyndon family bankrupt?'

At that moment, Lily shuddered when she heard this. She was shocked and extremely touched at the same time.

Darryl said that he would not let her suffer before leaving the other day. It turned out he went to the Lyndon Mansion!

She looked at Granny Lyndon right in front of her as she thought about this and gently said, "Granny, I'm sorry but I can't do that. Forgive me."

'What?' Granny Lyndon looked at Lily and was stunned.

The others' expressions behind her were tense as well.

"I..." Lily let out a long sigh and slowly said, "Right now, I don't want to speak with Darryl. Please don't force me."

Lily then turned and headed upstairs.

"Lily..."

Granny could not help but lightly call after her in despair while looking at Lily's silhouette.

...

On the other side of Donghai City—the Young Mansion.

Darryl was sitting on a chair in the Young Mansion's courtyard while feeling unspeakably melancholic. Yvonne was silently sitting by his side.

"Yvonne, tell me what should I do? Lily doesn't want to see me. You seem to always have ideas. Could you help me come up with something?" Darryl said bitterly to Yvonne.

Yvonne did not show any change in emotions when faced with Darryl's complaints and shook her head. "I don't know. I think we should leave her alone for a few days. Let's head back to the Carters first and return to find Lily a few days later."

Just now, Yvonne had received instructions from Lindsay Jones via the crystal ball to kill those people closest to Darryl as soon as possible. The people Darryl was closest to were in the Carter mansion which was the reason for Yvonne's suggestion to Darryl.

Darryl who oblivious to her ultimate purpose only nodded at that moment. "Sure, Yvonne. Let's go back to the Carters and find Lily a few days later."

"Phew!"

Darryl then let out a whistle before a white figure instantly appeared out of nowhere in mid-air. It was the Snow Eagle.

Ever since the Snow Eagle had recognized its master, the first place Darryl brought it was to the Young Mansion's courtyard. It had since treated this place as its home.

The Snow Eagle was staying there whenever Darryl was not in the World Universe.

After making his decision, Darryl and Yvonne sat on the Snow Eagle and headed

to Mid City.

The weather that day was great as it was windy and sunny. The Snow Eagle's speed was fast and arrived at Mid City within half an hour.

Chapter 990

'F*ck, why are there so many people at the main entrance?'

Darryl subconsciously looked over to the main entrance when they reached the Carter Mansion and was suddenly stunned.

There were close to a thousand young girls standing there. Some of them were quite gorgeous ladies with every girl having a hopeful and excited face. Their eyes were looking toward the main entrance.

In their hands were mini versions of the Nine Dragons Justice Flags. Not only that, a few of them were holding banners in their hands which jarringly read, 'Darryl Darby, I love you!'

"Alliance Master Darby is the best in the world!"

At that scene, Darryl almost fell off from the Snow Eagle's back.

'F*ck me. Are these my fans? Aren't they a little too passionate? They blocked the Carter Mansion's entrance just to see me?'

"Ah, Darryl!"

"Darryl is back!"

"Darryl, you're the only man I love in my entire life! Take me as your wife!"

At that moment, the fans noticed Darryl on the Snow Eagle and instantly exploded into screams. They were clutching their hearts with some being even more excited than when seeing a celebrity.

Everyone knew there was only one Snow Eagle in the World Universe. Naturally, the person on the Snow Eagle's back could only be Darryl!

Those girls were crazy as they rushed toward the Carter Mansion's main entrance!

The iron gate might be crushed if not for the Carter family's men blocking with all of their might.

Passionate! They were too passionate!

Darryl could not help but swallow hard upon looking at this situation before smiling and waving at his fans.

'Will Yvonne be jealous with so many girls confessing their love to me?' As he thought, he quickly looked at Yvonne as he thought and noticed her emotionless self without even a hint of jealousy.

'Wool!' Darryl secretly let out a sigh as he led the Snow Eagle and landed in the

back garden.

"Darryl, you're back!"

Sara who was playing in the garden jumped to greet him when he just landed.

Darryl smiled and nodded. He could not help but ask, "Sara, what's going on at the entrance? Why are there so many people?"

The situation was not like this a few days ago when he was in Donghai City.

Sara pursed her lips and smiled before saying, "It's all because of what happened at the exhibition we attended a few days ago. After you appeared at Max Harrington's exhibition, the entire Mid City knew that you were staying at the Carter Mansion so all of your female fans waited here daily for you to appear."

Sara hugged Darryl's arm as she said that. She could not hide the pride and admiration on her face. "Darryl, you're amazing! You're even more famous than those celebrities!"

'Being famous isn't a good thing.' Darryl did not know whether to laugh or cry from her words. His heart was bitter.

There were so many ladies blocking the main entrance, who could handle them?

Their identity being his fans only made it worse as he could not just chase them away. It was true that some people were indeed afraid of being too famous.

"Brother Darryl!"

At that moment, a voice came from the outside before a huge burly figure appeared at the entrance.

It was Oldest Villain One of the Ten Heaven Masters.

Darryl's spirit was lifted upon seeing him and quickly headed out.

Previously, Darryl made Oldest Villain One remained in the New World after the Incandescent Sec's destruction and gather information on Monica Vaughn.

"Do you have news of Monica?" Darryl asked impatiently once he was outside with hopeful eyes.

Chapter 991

Oldest Villain One sighed and shamefully said, "Brother Darryl. Brother Darryl, the Elysium Gate brothers had been spying around the New World Royal City for a few days. However, no one has heard anything about Monica Vaughn...."

In actuality, all of the officials at the New World Palace knew Monica Vaughn was at Guang Ping Palace. It should be easy to know about Monica Vaughn's news in technicality.

However, when Lord Kenny Bred heard that Darryl was still alive not long ago he forced and ordered all the officials not to mention a single word about Monica Vaughn as he was afraid Darryl would come looking for her.

Therefore, the Elysium Gate disciples have spied for a long time, yet no one had found any news about Monica Vaughn.

Slam!

Darryl could not help but punch the pole next to him from feeling extremely anxious.

'Monica, where the hell you are...' Darryl felt as though his heart was stabbed as Monica was with her child. Where could the mother and child be?

"Brother Darryl, I'll make a move," said Oldest Villain One respectfully upon seeing that Darryl was in a bad mood. He turned and left for fear of disturbing him further.

Darryl clenched his fist tightly as he could not control his feelings of longing. His entire mind was filled with Monica.

He fished out and lit a cigarette before taking a deep puff. He was inexplicably upset and only felt like being alone at that moment. He wanted to be by the beach.

However, many fans were waiting at the Carter Mansion's main entrance. He would be surrounded if he went out like that. Looking at this situation, he could only use the backdoor.

He felt helpless. This was his godfather's house after all. Why did he have to sneakily leave from the backdoor?

Darryl did not notice that Yvonne secretly followed him when he walked out of the backdoor.

Yvonne just received orders from Lindsay Jones again via the crystal ball, telling her that Donoghue was heading toward the World Universe to personally kill

Darryl. Therefore, Lindsay specifically ordered Yvonne to follow Darryl closely.

At the Carter Mansion's backdoor, Darryl put out his cigarette before pushing the door open and left.

He saw a bespectacled young man holding a black pill in his hand when he was outside who was yelling, "Come, come, come! Don't miss out on this! Do you see the elixir pill in my hand? This Divine Power Pill is personally made by Alliance Master Darby! Your powers will increase tremendously after consuming!"

Dozens of people surrounded the bespectacled young man and instantly laughed.

"Are you for real? How is it possible you could sell Darryl Darby's elixirs here?"

"I'm sure you're a conman!"

The bespectacled man panicked. "Hey, how could you say that! Behind me is the Carter Mansion where Darryl Darby stays. How could my elixir be fake?"

Darryl was suddenly cheered up at this scene.

'F*ck, how bold of you to use my name and sell elixirs.'

Sara had previously told Darryl some people were using his name to sell elixirs around the Carter Mansion—only that Darryl had never met any of them.

He had not expected to meet one on that day.

Darryl walked over as that thought crossed his mind.

The bespectacled man was getting more energetic in his speech while a girl stood out among the surrounding crowd.

The girl was wearing a short skirt and looked quite pretty. She was holding a phone in her hand as though she was live-streaming. Her phone was aimed at the bespectacled young man while live-streaming for people to see.

'Hmm? Why does she look so familiar?' Darryl went closer and was suddenly stunned. After a few seconds, he slapped his head as he remembered this girl was Dora Simpson! He first met her when she was a chauffeur which ended him in an antique scam.

Darryl remembered that Dora was a university student and after not seeing her for almost a year, she also started doing live-streaming. However, Dora was truly pretty and suitable to be a live-streaming host.

At that moment, Dora also saw Darryl and suddenly trembled in excitement!

Although she only met Darryl a few times, she felt he was not a simple guy every time she saw him.

It was not until a long time later when the New World Army attacked Donghai City

that Darryl made a name for himself and became the World Universe's hero. Dora finally knew how amazing he was!

The Elysium Gate Sect Master! Hero of the World Universe!

In addition to the most recent and shocking news which had spread—Darryl became the Alliance Master!

Chapter 992

At every mention of Darryl, Dora was extremely proud of the fact that she was an acquaintance of Darryl and that they have met a few times!

Dora had gone into live-streaming ever since graduating from the university. She initially just wanted to use live-streaming as a means to earn some extra income. However, she did not expect to gain millions of fans after a few live-streaming sessions.

Dora once talked about Darryl during a live-stream and mentioned that she knew Darryl, yet her fans did not believe her. Therefore, she came to the Carter Mansion to try her luck and see if she could meet Darryl.

She had not expected that she would be so lucky and really got to meet Darryl!

She was inexplicably excited with that thought in mind to the point where she was lost for words.

Darryl nodded at Dora before looking at the bespectacled young man. This young man was using his name to sell elixirs. It was infuriating yet funny at the same time.

"Boss!" Darryl smiled and asked, "Is this Divine Power Pill of yours really made by Darryl?"

"Of course, how could it be fake?" The bespectacled young man looked at Darryl and confidently said, "I'll refund you if it's not real. Brother, you look a little weak. This Divine Power Pill is suitable for you. Do you want to buy one? I see that you and I are very fated to be at first glance so I'll charge you cheaper..."

Darryl could not help but laughed before looking at the bespectacled young man and asked, "Do you know who I am?"

"You..." The young man scrutinized Darryl with a confused face.

At the same time, Dora finally came to her senses and could not help but let out a laugh. "Boss, you're selling elixirs made by Darryl Darby yet you don't even recognize the Alliance Master Darby himself. How funny! Haha!"

As she said that, Dora turned the live-stream camera toward Darryl and excitedly said, "Everybody, look! It's Darryl Darby! It's him! I've said that I knew Darryl Darby, yet you guys did not believe me! I'm here today to show all of you!"

Dora then hopefully looked at Darryl and cheerfully asked, "Darryl, do you know me?"

"Yes, yes, I do," said Darryl with a smile.

Gasp!

At that instant, Dora's live-stream exploded with assorted comments on her phone's screen!

"F*ck! Darryl Darby!"

"Wow! Alliance Master Darby! Dora's amazing! She met Alliance Master Darby while live-streaming!"

"Who knew that Dora and Darryl Darby knew each other!"

Dora was unspeakably overjoyed from looking at the comments. She could see that those people watching the live-stream had instantly doubled with many giving her gifts as well.

Darryl laughed and waved at the people watching the live-stream before looking at the bespectacled young man and slowly said, "You've used my name to scam others so what should we do about you?"

Thud!

The bespectacled young man was bewildered and dropped the elixir pill in his hand before he kept bowing. "M-master D-Darby, I-I must be blind. I really won't dare do this in the future. I won't dare to..." The young man was almost in tears.

"Alright, alright." Darryl waved his hands. "You seem young and have sold fake elixirs due to your life's circumstances. The elixir you sold are just ordinary medicines and do not harm one's body so I won't find fault with you. However, you cannot sell these fake elixirs anymore. You got it?"

"Y-yes...Alliance Master Darby," replied the bespectacled young man immediately before furiously nodded his head and quickly ran away.

At that scene, Dora's live-stream exploded in heated comments again!

"Look! No wonder he's the Alliance Master. He handles the situation so well!"

"He's no doubt an idol!"

"Darryl Darby is so cool and handsome!"

At that moment, the number of people watching Dora's live-stream was in the millions and it was still rising fast! Looking at this situation, Dora was stunned and excited at the same time!

"Darryl, many of those in m-my live-stream are your fans. C-can I...interview you?" Dora asked hopefully.

Darryl was extremely famous at that moment. The number of people watching

her live-stream might even hit dozens of millions if she could just interview him!

Darryl could not help but laugh upon seeing Dora's pleading eyes. "Yes, of course."

Darryl had an especially good impression of Dora as she used to work as a chauffeur while studying. If him being interviewed by her could help her live-stream gain more audience and earn more money, Darryl was very willing to help her.

"Really?!" Dora was overjoyed and excitedly hugged Darryl's arm before saying, "Let's head to the Blue Sky Hotel then. I'll get us a room and have the interview there!"

She pulled Darryl toward the Blue Sky Hotel as she said that.

Chapter 993

The Blue Sky Hotel was a newly opened high-class five-star hotel in Donghai City.

The vintage theme hotel had 18 floors that were made to be entirely free of any technology! The Blue Sky Hotel's motto was to allow its patrons experience how it feels like to be treated like an emperor!

The hotel rooms were indeed renovated to mimic the ancient times such that even the hotel staff wore clothes similar to palace servants.

It could be said the Blue Sky Hotel was the most unique five-star hotel.

At the hotel, Dora booked the most expensive room on the 18th floor called the Mental Cultivation Hall which costs 80,000 a night! Those who could book such rooms were without a doubt people of high status.

Dora impatiently sat down after entering the room and said, "Darryl, can we start the interview?"

"Don't be impatient, I'll head to the bathroom first," said Darryl. He estimated the interview would take a few hours, so he better relieved himself first.

He then headed to the bathroom.

He was stunned when he pushed the door and entered the bathroom only to realize there was no toilet bowl in the bathroom but a small chamber pot instead.

'F*ck, this hotel really takes the ancient living to another level. Even the bathrooms are fitted like the ancient period with just a chamber pot...' Darryl smiled bitterly. He aimed for a long time before peeing into it.

On the other side of the bathroom door, Dora had placed her cellphone on the table and quickly took out her makeup kit to add a layer of lipstick.

"Guys, wait for a while for me to go touch up my makeup," said Dora to the phone.

She had to look good if she was going to interview Darryl.

Dora finished applying her makeup and was just about to pick up her phone when she suddenly saw a woman entered!

The woman was wearing a long dress and looked extremely gorgeous! However, her facial expression was as cold as ice. It was Yvonne Young!

Yvonne followed Darryl all the way here. She decided that their relationship must not be simple seeing how Dora was quite close to Darryl with both of them booking a hotel room. She started emitting a murderous intent.

Yvonne looked coldly at Dora. 'This girl must be someone Darryl loves!'

Dora was stunned as she subconsciously looked at Yvonne. 'Who's this woman? How can she be so gorgeous yet so rude? How can she enter without even knocking?'

"You—" Dora was just about to ask her, but saw Yvonne unexpectedly lifted her hand and slapped her just when she muttered her first word.

Slap!

Yvonne used her full might for this slap. Dora let out a muffled grunt as her entire body flew up before smashing the window and fell from the 18th floor!

Yvonne was not a high-level cultivator. However, Dora was just an ordinary person so how could she even block that move?

Gasp!

Screams could be heard from the streets down below a few seconds after Dora fell. Yvonne did not even take a look as she turned and quickly left.

Those people watching the live-stream were stunned too.

"What happened?"

"It seems like the host yelled before there were sounds of glass breaking."

It took no longer than five seconds from the time Yvonne came in till she attacked Dora. The people watching the live-stream had not seen Yvonne as the phone was placed on the table.

Darryl also came out of the toilet just at that moment when heard the sounds of glass shattering and knew something was up. In a panic, his last few drops of pee splashed onto his pants.

He only saw the floor was full of shattered glass when he came out of the bathroom with Dora nowhere to be found. Darryl was stunned before headed to the window and looked down. He was completely stunned at what he saw.

He saw Dora was on the ground below in a pool of blood while being surrounded by a crowd of onlookers. ❶

This...

Chapter 994

"What is going on? I just went to the toilet and she died when I came back?"

At that instant, Darryl was stunned and furious while feeling very confused too. The next moment, Darryl looked at her phone and noticed the live-stream was still going on. He quickly picked the phone up and anxiously asked, "What happened just now? How did Dora die?"

At the same time, Darryl took the phone and showed them the situation below.

Gasp!

Instantly, the entire live-stream was in a mess.

What? Dora fell? What happened?

Suddenly, everyone in the live-stream was shocked!

Someone immediately started to point the arrow at Darryl. ❶

"Darryl, did you push Dora down?"

"Darryl, you are a hero of the World Universe. How could you push a petite female host down?"

The people in the live-stream subconsciously thought that Darryl attacked Dora. They were alone in a hotel room after all. Perhaps Darryl wanted to sleep with Dora but she rejected him so he pushed her out of anger and frustration?

The others followed suit once someone took the lead.

"Darryl, Dora is so cute. How could you do that to her? Are you even human?"

"So this is the so-called hero of our World Universe. Hehe..."

"Darryl, stop pretending. Only two of you were in this room. You must have made excessive demands which the hostess does not agree with so you acted ruthlessly to her. I can't believe we treated you like our hero!"

Darryl was furious yet helpless upon looking at the messages of attacks reprimanding himself.

"I just went to the bathroom!" Darryl could not help but explain himself.

However, the people on the live-stream scolded him further the more he explained.

At that moment, Darryl was livid with his eyes also turned bloodshot. He did not feel like saying further and immediately shut off the live-stream before running

downstairs.

Dora had stopped breathing by the time he arrived downstairs. The ambulance then rushed over along with doctors and nurses. It was a huge commotion.

Darryl was extremely anxious and asked for the surveillance footage on his way downstairs. However, the entire hotel was mimicking the ancient style such that even their staff were not permitted to use their phones. How could there be any form of surveillance footage?

The opinions of the netizens were like sharp swords. In merely half a day, the news of how the World Universe Hero had brutalized a female hostess spread like wildfire throughout the entire internet! Everyone was blaming Darryl.

Various media outlets also issued reports with Darryl pushed to the forefront of public opinion.

In an instant, Darryl's glorious image was heavily tarnished.

...

On the other side of Donghai City.

A new clinic opened on the coast of Donghai.

The clinic which was opened by Shelly Sullivan had an interesting name—the Eternal Life Clinic. It was because her husband, Chester Wilson was the Eternal Life Palace Sect Master.

Ever since marrying Chester, Shelly was heavily influenced by Chester's righteousness and was determined to do something for the people. She was previously the Chief of Staff at the City Hospital and had an extensive medical foundation so she opened this clinic to treat people for free.

Chapter 995

Shelly was already a few months pregnant. Chester had advised her not to work so hard, yet Shelly still insisted on opening the clinic so he had no choice but to relent.

Shelly was famous for her great medical skills, hence her clinic was gaining popularity with many seeking her for medical treatment.

At the moment, the pregnant Shelly was in the consultation room checking up on a young lady.

The lady barely even had the energy to speak with how dispirited and pale her face was. Even though the lady looked like she could stop breathing at any moment, strangely not a single injury could be found on her.

"Another case of her spirit energy being absorbed..." Shelly muttered to herself.

For the past three days, Shelly had seen five ladies with the same condition.

These ladies have the same characteristics of not having any injuries on them, yet seemed extremely dispirited with their lives hanging by the thread.

They would not survive more than two days no matter what type of medicine Shelly had given them.

Shelly remembered the time when she stumbled upon the first of such cases. Chester was there as well and said that her spirit energy had been absorbed. Someone from the martial arts world caused it, and there was no cure for it.

At that time, Shelly refused to believe. However, her current confidence had long disappeared without a trace under the constant blows.

'Could all these women's spirit energy have been absorbed? Is there really such dark cultivation methods in the martial arts world?'

"Doctor!" An anxious yell came from the main hall outside at that very moment.

Shelly quickly went over to look. She saw a pretty young girl standing there covered in blood while looking extremely panicked.

She quickly approached Shelly upon seeing her and urgently said, "You're the miracle healer Doctor Shelly right? I beg you, please save my father."

The girl's eyes flashed with a hint of malice when she said that.

Darryl, Chester, and Dax would have been utterly stunned if they were there at that moment! It was because this young girl was none other than Leroy Henderson's daughter—Lydia Henderson.

Previously, Leroy Henderson had fled after the failed ambush against Darryl at the Fuyao Palace. He finally came and hid at Donghai City after passing through many places.

The few women whose spirit energy had been absorbed were indeed caused by Leroy using the Dark Method.

On that day, Leroy found out that Chester's wife opened a clinic. Therefore, he made his daughter trick her out in the name of healing him.

Leroy knew that with his current powers, he could not stand against Darryl and his sworn brothers so he could only start from their family members.

"Girl, don't panic. Where's your father now? How was he injured?" Shelly anxiously asked.

Lydia pretended to be extremely anxious and panicky as she cried and said, "My father is in the woods. He had lost a lot of blood and couldn't walk. I can't carry him either. Doctor Shelly, I beg you to follow me and save my father."

Lydia was about to kneel as she said that.

Shelly quickly stopped her and nodded. "Ok. I'll follow you right away."

"Mistress!"

At that moment, the Eternal Life Palace disciples by her side who were specially instructed to guard Shelly could not help but said, "The Master has instructed that you can't leave the clinic."

Shelly bit her lip before waving her hand. "You don't have to remind me. As a doctor, I can't stand there and watch them die." She turned around to grab her medical kit and followed Lydia out of the clinic while saying that.

The few disciples looked at each other before quickly following suit.

Half an hour later, they arrived at the Northern suburb's woods.

Shelly frowned upon not seeing the injured mentioned by Lydia and could not help but ask, "Girl, where's your father?"

"Why are you so impatient?" Lydia sneered as she said those few words coldly with her panicky and anxious look long gone.

The few Eternal Life Palace disciples immediately surrounded Shelly to protect her upon seeing that young girl's suspicious behavior.

Swoosh!